This is a reproduction of a library book that was digitized by Google as part of an ongoing effort to preserve the information in books and make it universally accessible.

Google books

https://books.google.com

THE WAR WORK
OF THE
Y.M.C.A. IN EGYPT

JAMES W. BARRETT

Digitized by Google

Library
of the
University of Wisconsin
PRESENTED BY
THE AUTHOR

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

THE WAR WORK OF THE Y.M.C.A. IN EGYPT

Digitized by Google

WORKS BY

SIR JAMES W. BARRETT

Just Published. *Two Volumes. With Maps and Diagrams. Demy 8vo, 25s. net; postage 9d., abroad 1s. 4d.*

THE TWIN IDEALS:

An Educated Commonwealth

"This highly interesting work . . . a number of illuminating articles . . . not only is there no stodginess but a good deal of very pleasant entertainment."

Saturday Review.

"Although he writes for Australia principally, all the rest of the world will lose nothing by reading him."

Westminster Gazette.

(With the Assistance of Lieut. P. E. DEANE, A.A.M.C.)

Just Published. With 34 Plates and 3 Maps. Demy 8vo, 12s. 6d. net; postage 6d.

THE AUSTRALIAN ARMY MEDICAL CORPS IN EGYPT

An illustrated and detailed account of the early organisation and work of the Australian Medical Units in Egypt in 1914-15.

"Sir James Barrett's handsome volume . . . interesting as a story of human effort in time of stress and valuable as a record of medical administration under difficulties . . . a work that should find many readers."

British Medical Journal.

Nearly Ready. With 23 Plates and 3 Maps. Demy 8vo.

THE WAR WORK OF THE Y.M.C.A. IN EGYPT

With a Preface by SIR E. H. H. ALLENBY

In the Press, for early publication. Demy 8vo.

A VISION OF THE POSSIBLE:

What the R.A.M.C. might become.

An account of some of the Medical Work in Egypt, together with a constructive criticism of the R.A.M.C.

H. K. LEWIS & CO. LTD.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

MRS. JESSOP.

W. JESSOP.
Secretary.

Frontispiece

Digitized by Google

THE WAR WORK OF THE Y.M.C.A. IN EGYPT

BY

JAMES W. BARRETT

K.B.E., C.B., C.M.G., M.D., M.S., F.R.C.S.(ENG.)

TEMPORARY LIEUT.-COL. R.A.M.C.

LATELY LIEUT.-COL. A.A.M.C. AND A.D.M.S. AUSTRALIAN FORCE IN EGYPT, CONSULTING OCULIST TO THE FORCE IN EGYPT AND REGISTRAR FIRST AUSTRALIAN GENERAL HOSPITAL; OPHTHALMOLOGIST TO THE MELBOURNE HOSPITAL, MEMBER OF COUNCIL OF MANAGEMENT AND LECTURER ON THE PHYSIOLOGY OF THE SPECIAL SENSES IN THE UNIVERSITY OF MELBOURNE, CONSULTING SURGEON VICTORIAN EYE AND EAR HOSPITAL; CONSULTING AURIST, E.E.F., 1916–18; PRESIDENT INVALIDING AND CLASSIFICATION BOARDS, CAIRO AND DISTRICT, 1917–18; MEMBER COUNCIL BRITISH RED CROSS, EGYPT, AND ALSO Y.M.C.A., EGYPT

H. K. LEWIS & CO. LTD.

136 GOWER STREET, LONDON, W.C.1

1919

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

227484
AUG 26 1919
F08792
.B27

"The dogmas of the quiet past are inadequate to the stormy present. The occasion is piled high with difficulty, and we must rise with the occasion. As our case is new, we must think anew and act anew" (ABRAHAM LINCOLN).

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

PREFACE

DURING a lull in the battles which have driven the Turkish armies from Palestine, it has been my good fortune to read a copy of this book, *The Work of the Y.M.C.A. in Egypt.*

No one has more reason than I to be grateful to the Y.M.C.A. for its work in connection with the army.

Throughout the campaign, its workers have followed closely the fighting line; and their labours have done much to keep up the moral, mental, and physical efficiency of my troops.

Sir James Barrett tells how the Young Men's Christian Association originated; and he describes its organization, objects, and methods—especially with regard to its work in Egypt.

His book is of absorbing interest, and the reader is filled with admiration and gratitude towards the organizers and administrators of this vast undertaking.

Broad-minded Christianity, self-regardless devotion to work, a spirit of daring enterprise, and sound business guidance have built up an organization which has earned the gratitude of the Empire.

(*Signed*) EDMUND H. H. ALLENBY, *General,*
Commanding-in-Chief, E.E.F.

October 23, 1918.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

INTRODUCTION

I PROPOSE in this little work to present briefly an account of the war work done by the Y.M.C.A. in Egypt, and have felt impelled to do so for two sets of reasons. In the first place the work in itself has been, in my judgment, admirable. It has met a want that could not have been supplied by any other existing organization, and it has proved of vast service to the army during the strain of a war the duration of which has exceeded all anticipations.

There are, however, a number of other and powerful reasons for dealing with the subject. The Y.M.C.A. throughout the world is administered by secretaries, many of whom are appointed by the International Committees of Great Britain, Australia, New Zealand, and the United States, and some of whom differ from the officials of very many other organizations in the English-speaking world in one important characteristic. A number of the American secretaries are men whose convictions incline them to the life they follow, but who in order to participate in this life undergo a special course of training, of university character, in the Y.M.C.A. College at Springfield, Massachusetts, a training which fits them to investigate and to deal with social problems from the point of view of the man of sound heart and strong head. In Egypt and Palestine secretaries have been supplied from British,

Digitized by Google

Australian, New Zealand, Indian, and American sources. One of the most successful secretaries in Palestine is an Australian.

Before the war I only knew of the Y.M.C.A. as a comparatively small organization in Australia, which provided not very pretentious clubs for the use of its members, which was administered by some public-spirited citizens, and which appeared to my uninformed judgment simply to represent an additional sectarian movement. During the annual military manœuvres, recreation and rest tents were provided in camps, together with stationery and the like, and the whole movement created a pleasant but not an overwhelming impression.

I arrived in Egypt in January 1915, with the 1st Australian General Hospital, with which I was connected as registrar and oculist. I subsequently became an Assistant Director of Medical Services on the Staff of Surgeon-General Ford, the Director of Medical Services, Egypt, and in that capacity was intimately concerned with the preparations made for the reception of the wounded from the Dardanelles. Only those who were in Egypt in 1915 can ever form an adequate conception of the storm which broke over that ancient and placid country. There have been battles recorded in history in which larger numbers of wounded have been dealt with, but it is improbable that ever before was so large a number of wounded dealt with in so confined a space. Owing to its singular and unique geographical position, Egypt has no lateral communications—that is, communications which are practicable for transport of the sick and wounded; consequently when 16,000 sick and wounded entered Egypt in the first few days, followed by scores of thousands afterwards as time

Digitized by Google

rolled on, they had to be accommodated somewhere in Egypt. When hospital after hospital was opened, even as far as Helouan south of Cairo, it became a question whether the demand for accommodation would exceed the supply, or whether there would not be a breakdown analogous to that which subsequently took place in Mesopotamia. Fortunately the want was just met and the difficulties were just surmounted.

It was at this trying and difficult time, when those responsible were overwhelmed with the task of seeking new buildings and turning them into hospitals, of seeking new methods of transport and of hurrying up and increasing reinforcements, that a number of undesirable events were taking place in connection with convalescents and men on leave. It was not possible for any of the official staff to do anything to provide for the social wants of the men, since their hands were too full. But at this juncture Mrs. Elgood, herself a medical practitioner, though not in practice, took charge of the social wants of the men in the Australian Hospitals, and organized a brigade of Anglo-Egyptian ladies and gentlemen, to whom Australia should be ever grateful. At the same time Mr. Jessop, the General Secretary of the Y.M.C.A. in Egypt, offered his services, and earnestly discussed with me what could be done to ameliorate the position of those discharged from hospital and of men on leave. At that time the British Red Cross Egyptian Branch was not in existence. The Y.M.C.A., which was splendidly meeting the needs of the various camps, had no war funds available, but Mr. Jessop said that if I could find the money from the Australian Branch British Red Cross, he would undertake the work.

I then consulted the High Commissioner for Egypt, Sir Henry MacMahon, who was the President of the

Digitized by Google

Australian Red Cross Committee, and—if I may be permitted to say so—whose sincere and laborious efforts in such matters earned for him the affectionate respect of those who came in contact with him. I asked him whether, on behalf of the Australian Red Cross, I could enter into a practical alliance with the Y.M.C.A. so that the work could be done; I proposed that we should jointly determine the principles of action, that the Australian Red Cross should find the money and the Y.M.C.A. should do the work. He advised me unhesitatingly to take action at once, and his advice was immediately followed, this alliance continuing until my retirement from the Australian Red Cross in September 1915. It was during this period that an institution, now of world-wide fame, the Esbekieh Soldiers' Club, was established.

As I knew nothing about the methods of the Y.M.C.A., the position was very frankly discussed with Mr. Jessop. The only embargo I felt inclined to put on the work of the Y.M.C.A. was the absolute prohibition of any attempt to proselytize. Mr. Jessop replied that the work was entirely interdenominational, that the Y.M.C.A. never attempted to proselytize, and asked me whether there was any objection to religious services being held in any of the institutions that we organized jointly. I agreed that there could be no possible objection to services held by any religious denomination, provided men were allowed to attend or not, exactly as they pleased, and on this basis the matter was arranged.

The only other restriction was one imposed by Mr. Jessop, that alcohol should not be sold in any clubs which the Y.M.C.A. managed for us, an arrangement which was readily agreed to.

Digitized by Google

I was invalided to England in November 1915, and returned to Egypt in March 1916, having been transferred from the Australian to the Imperial service. On my return, the War Work Committee of the Y.M.C.A. were kind enough to ask me to join them, and I have been associated with them ever since, although the pressure of military work has curtailed the time available for such activities. It so happens, therefore, that I have witnessed the initiation of the Y.M.C.A. work in Egypt at the beginning of the war, and have had it more or less under observation during the term of the war. It is now proposed to set out in this volume, in a plain matter-of-fact way, exactly what was done.

I have utilized in this work a large number of reports which are set out more or less verbatim. They could have been condensed, but it was thought better to set them out in full, because in that way the difficulties and the attitude at the time are better indicated.

In conclusion, I can but say that when the time comes to return home and to leave military work for good, like many other people I shall look back with feelings of respect and admiration upon a large body of devoted men and women who were of profound service to the troops, but who never let their hearts run away with their heads.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

CONTENTS

PAGE

PREFACE, BY GENERAL ALLENBY . . . vii

INTRODUCTION ix

CHAPTER I

WHAT IS THE Y.M.C.A.? 1

CHAPTER II

THE Y.M.C.A. COLLEGE AND Y.M.C.A. POLICY . 10

CHAPTER III

THE RELATIONSHIP OF THE Y.M.C.A. TO THE CHURCHES IN EGYPT 21

CHAPTER IV

EGYPT BEFORE THE WAR 29

CHAPTER V

EGYPT IN 1914–1915 33

CHAPTER VI

SOLDIERS' CLUBS, 1915 45

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER VII

PAGE

At the Dardanelles 68

CHAPTER VIII

1916 83

CHAPTER IX

Work in the Sudan 102

CHAPTER X

Western Desert 106

CHAPTER XI

1917 115

CHAPTER XII

Work amongst the Indian Troops . . . 126

CHAPTER XIII

1918 132

CHAPTER XIV

Physical Education 146

CHAPTER XV

Finance 184

CHAPTER XVI

Conclusion 192

Digitized by Google

APPENDIXES

PAGE

APPENDIX I. SHORT PARTICULARS OF Y.M.C.A. CENTRES WITH THE TROOPS IN EGYPT AND THE NEAR EAST, MARCH 21, 1916 . . . 195

APPENDIX II. LADIES WHO HAVE ASSISTED MRS. DUNN, MRS. BEARD, AND MISS GREENHORNE AT THE ESBEKIEH 199

APPENDIX III. APPROXIMATE LIST OF CENTRES DURING 1916 201

APPENDIX IV. CENTRES DURING 1917 . . 203

APPENDIX V. CENTRES DURING 1918 . . 205

APPENDIX VI. FINANCIAL STATEMENT . . 209

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

Mr. and Mrs. Jessop . . . . . *Frontispiece*

FACING PAGE

[redacted] 29

. . 31

T, AT

. . 34

. . 46

. . 50

. . 52

. . 55

. . 58

. . 62

Anzac Hostel 66

Anzac 70

A. H. Johnson, O.B.E. 95

Y.M.C.A., Ghebit, Sudan 104

Some Y.M.C.A. Secretaries and Workers . . . 116

Typical Y.M.C.A. Canal Hut 118

Typical Y.M.C.A. Marquee, Canal Railhead. . . 118

NOTE

The red triangles on the maps indicate the sites of Y.M.C.A. centres.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

NOTE

The red triangles on the maps indicate the sites of Y.M.C.A. centres.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

Mr. and Mrs. Jessop . . . . . *Frontispiece*

FACING PAGE

R. E. Monteith-Smith, O.B.E. 29

R. M. Grainger-Stewart 31

First Y.M.C.A. Marquee erected in Egypt, at Heliopolis 34

Y.M.C.A., Alexandria 46

Y.M.C.A., Esbekieh 50

Y.M.C.A., Esbekieh 52

Y.M.C.A., Esbekieh, Entrance 55

Swimming Bath, Esbekieh 58

Y.M.C.A., Esbekieh, The Rink 62

Anzac Hostel 66

Anzac 70

A. H. Johnson, O.B.E. 95

Y.M.C.A., Ghebit, Sudan 104

Some Y.M.C.A. Secretaries and Workers 116

Typical Y.M.C.A. Canal Hut 118

Typical Y.M.C.A. Marquee, Canal Railhead. . . . 118

Digitized by Google

FACING PAGE

Convalescent Tea, Esbekieh 120

Typical Y.M.C.A. Dug-outs, Front Line . . . 136

Interior of Officers' Lounge at Kantara . . 138

Y.M.C.A., Jerusalem 140

Y.M.C.A., Jaffa 142

Y.M.C.A. Cinema, Jaffa 142

Camouflaged Y.M.C.A. Marquee, Nablous Road, Palestine 145

G. Gilbert Deaver, M.D., B.P.E.. 159

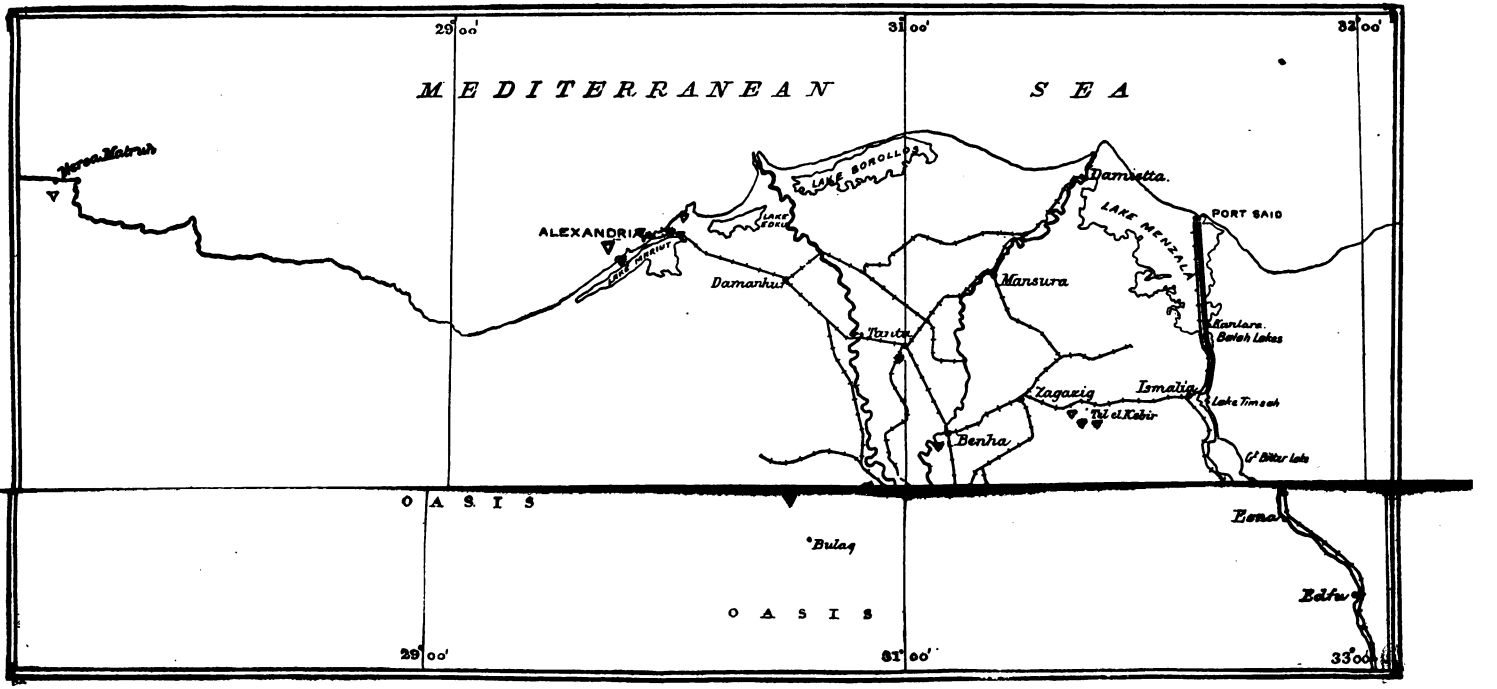
Map of the Eastern Mediterranean . . . 194

Map of Egypt and the Western Desert: the Oases 1

Map of Canal Zone, Sinai, and Palestine . . 208

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google



To face page 1]

EGYPT AND THE WESTERN DESERT: THE OASES

Digitized by Google

THE WAR WORK OF THE Y.M.C.A. IN EGYPT

CHAPTER I

WHAT IS THE Y.M.C.A.?

I HAVE found so many people who were, like myself, imperfectly informed respecting the organization, objects, and methods of the Y.M.C.A. that I propose briefly to indicate them as they are known to me. At the same time, it should not be forgotten that the subject-matter of this volume is in the main not the work of the Y.M.C.A. in general, but the special war work which they so successfully undertook in Egypt and Palestine.

The Y.M.C.A. owes its immediate origin to the efforts of Sir George Williams, an English merchant of strong religious convictions, who practically founded the Association in 1844, when he was twenty-three years of age. He formed a small association in the warehouse in which he worked, for the purpose of Christian study. The movement spread slowly and in due course extended beyond its primary location. The problem which faced him is a problem which has been faced over and over again by those who live in cities Young men who earn very small incomes, and work hard, have no means available for indulgence in intellectual and physical

Digitized by Google

recreation, and they are very apt to find the alternative to the drudgery of their work in the direction of alcohol and its associations, for it should never be forgotten that the public-house is, to a large section of mankind, its social club, and the purchase of drink is the subscription to the club. It was the time of Charles Kingsley and Carlyle, the factory system was rapidly developing, and Sir George Williams felt the necessity for the action he so successfully took. Whatever the final result of the Y.M.C.A. work may be, it should be remembered that it began entirely as a religious movement, with meetings for prayer and other informal religious exercises, and apparently differed in no way from some other revivalist undertakings. There had been many other similar movements previously, and it is interesting to note the way in which Sir George Williams's effort ultimately differed from those which had gone before.

Towards the end of 1844 a tea-meeting was held, at which 161 young men were present, and it was agreed that there should be two such meetings during the year. It is interesting to read that at the first annual meeting, at the end of 1845, one of the speakers stated that it would be no unimportant result if the movement led to the library and social knowledge rather than to cards and billiards, the cigar divan and concert parties.

The next development which occurred was the inception of the Exeter Hall Lectures, a winter course of which was given for twenty years from 1845; the lectures were successful, and were published ultimately in pamphlet form. The subjects of the lectures covered a remarkable range. The movement continued to spread, and yet, as the historian narrates, it was, from our point of view, exceedingly narrow in its outlook,

Digitized by Google

for as early as 1846 the secretary of the Y.M.C.A. in answer to a correspondent said: "We have no hesitation in saying that a Christian young man had better not compete in a swimming match, or indeed in a match of any kind. The desire of distinction will in itself be a snare, while if he should win in the strife, passions of envy, jealousy, or disappointment may be engendered in his competitors." And later, Archbishop Trench and Dr. Dale are criticized "for trailing their Christian priesthood in the dust to offer homage to the memory of a dead playwright," namely, one William Shakespeare.

In 1849 the head-quarters of the Association were removed to larger premises in Gresham Street, City, and it was then Sir George Williams urged the wisdom of admitting to the library, reading-rooms, and class-rooms those who were not available for membership of the Association, while the additional accommodation enabled the committee to introduce evening classes for young men, the Association thus taking its place amongst the pioneers of this department of educational work. This suggestion of enlarging the use of the library and reading-rooms was strenuously opposed by some members of the committee, but the proposal was adopted, and is now one of the principal features of the Y.M.C.A. throughout the world, namely, the admission of non-members to the advantages of the Y.M.C.A., but not to its management. It should be remembered, when discussing the narrowness of outlook, that probably all religious bodies at this period were also characterized by the narrow outlook which was peculiar to the time, and the breadth of view shown at this juncture by Sir George Williams is not a little remarkable.

Digitized by Google

Those who know the work of the Y.M.C.A. to-day, and especially its war work, will realize how the mode of thought has changed.

In 1855 a conference was held in Paris between delegates from the English Y.M.C.A. and similar societies elsewhere, and the Y.M.C.A. became a world-wide organization. The celebrated "Paris resolution" reads as follows:

> "The Young Men's Christian Association seeks to unite those young men who, regarding Jesus Christ as their God and Saviour according to the Holy Scripture, desire to be His disciples in their doctrine and in their life, and to associate their efforts for the extension of His Kingdom among young men."

In 1871 *Punch* was excluded from one of the Y.M.C.A. buildings by reason of a statement which appeared to some of the members to be a sneer at religion, and this elicited from Sir George Williams a statement of the position of the Y.M.C.A.:

"With the provision of opportunities for religious culture and of education under religious sanctions, our engagements with young men are fulfilled. We have never proposed to ourselves, or in any manner undertaken, to cater for the recreation of young men, even in directions which are both lawful and expedient. The provision of recreative literature would stand on the same ground as the provision of physical recreations or other lawful amusements. It should not be looked for in connection with the arrangements for the Young Men's Christian Association."

It will therefore be seen that at this stage of its develop-

Digitized by Google

ment, 1871, it was characterized by a puritanical element, and a sincere though narrow outlook, but in its essence it differed in no way from any of the other religious groups. It will be interesting to notice the manner in which it has developed into a body the characteristic feature of which is liberality and breadth of view. In 1880 the Association purchased Exeter Hall, and in 1881, after the Ninth International Conference, attempts were made to organize the various Y.M.C.A. organizations throughout the country by providing a National Correlating Organization.

There is no doubt that many of the characteristics of the Y.M.C.A. of to-day have been introduced from the United States, and Sir George Williams in his visits to the United States had become aware of the American method of facing the problem; but, as his biographer adds, it is to be feared that this forward policy has not been carried out in Britain with the enthusiasm it deserves. It should be noted, however, that the policy of general adaptation of work to suit class needs which has been taken up so amazingly was formulated by the founder of the British Y.M.C.A.

The American Y.M.C.A. was established in 1851, and at a meeting held in 1901, the jubilee of the American Institution, the whole organization was reviewed. The American Associations abide firmly by the first principles of Evangelical declaration, as drawn up in the Paris Test of 1855, which is quoted in this chapter. The declaration is still universally approved, notwithstanding the development of libraries, reading-rooms, gymnasiums, playgrounds, education classes or lectures, and many other activities which are now undertaken by the Y.M.C.A. Just as the American Playground system is spreading throughout the world,

Digitized by Google

and especially the British world, so the social and athletic methods adopted by the American Y.M.C.A. are spreading to Y.M.C.A. Institutions in all other parts of the world, but the members find it possible to reconcile this new development with the original Paris declaration. The view now taken is that the methods to be adopted to carry that declaration into effect are not only social and intellectual, but also physical, and on the social and physical sides America has led Great Britain. The Association now recognizes that healthy young men are certain to demand social and physical recreation, that it is the business of the Association to provide this on a satisfactory and attractive scale, that healthy activities of the kind should be available to all. So it comes about that a sincere but comparatively narrow sectarian movement has broadened out into an Association which seeks largely to effect its ends by indirect means, providing for young men everything that is healthy in the way of social and physical recreation, or, if they prefer it, of intellectual cultivation. It is because of this attitude that the Y.M.C.A. has been of profound service during the war.

In 1864 a critical decision was taken, for the whole question of the relationship of the Y.M.C.A. to the Church came up for settlement. Certain members of the Association thought that it might serve as a feeder for different denominational societies, otherwise they took the view that the Association was in competition with the churches. The conclusion arrived at, however, was that the Y.M.C.A. was not a church, and that it was not associated with any one sect, but that it was a neutral meeting-place for members of all sorts and conditions; in other words, it was interdenomina-

Digitized by Google

tional. Sir George Williams himself was a member of a religious organization apart from the Y.M.C.A.

With this necessarily brief sketch, it is well to turn to the American Y.M.C.A. and shortly sketch its organization, its objects, and its methods. The American Y.M.C.A. is essentially representative in character so far as its organization is concerned, but one of the most interesting features of the arrangement is the extent to which decentralization is carried. The principle of local autonomy runs right through the Association, a principle which was adopted in the British Y.M.C.A. in 1855. A branch of the Y.M.C.A. established in a city is managed by a local committee with a secretary appointed by the central body and frequently trained at the Springfield College. Its property is vested in the local body, which sends representatives on a numerical scale to an Annual Convention. At this convention, which is attended by as many as 1,200 delegates, the policy of the Association is discussed and various committees are appointed, including the International Committee. The International Committee is not international in its constitution, but is international in the scope of its operations, since secretaries appointed by this body are found in India, Egypt, and elsewhere, by arrangement with the British Y.M.C.A. At times international conferences in the strict sense of the term have been held. It was at the Annual American Convention of 1916 that the Paris basis was reaffirmed as follows:

"The American Associations abide firmly by the first principles of the Evangelical test, as drawn up in the Paris declaration of 1855. It suggests, as one of the speakers at the Convention of 1901 said, nothing about library, reading-rooms, educational classes or lectures,

Digitized by Google

and yet, as he was careful to point out, every one of these things must tend to the promotion of objects specified so clearly in the first declaration of the Association."

The American Association is to this extent sectarian, in that active membership of the Association and the holding of office in the Association are only open to those who are supposed to endorse the Paris basis, though it is not the practice to formally ask members or office holders whether they do definitely endorse it, since the position is largely assumed. On the other hand, so far as the enjoyment of the advantages of the Y.M.C.A. is concerned, so far as assisting in phases of its work, and so far as taking part in the social activities of its association, the profession of religion is not a bar; anyone, agnostic or Jew, is not debarred, but he is necessarily debarred from taking part in the management.

The American Y.M.C.A. has become fairly wealthy, but the bulk of the property is not centred in the International Committee. The total funds vested in the International Committee amount to £700,000, whilst the total funds in America amount to £18,500,000. The annual expenditure on home work by the International Committee is £66,000 and on foreign work £88,000.

There are about 700,000 members, and there are about 4,353 Employed Officers and 744 Physical Directors.

"The American Y.M.C.A. has established six or more distinct organizations. First among these specialized agencies is one formed among students in the Universities, resulting in other important movements, including the Inter-Collegiate Young Men's

Digitized by Google

Christian Association, and the World's Student Christian Federation. Another organization is composed exclusively of railroad men—railroad men working for Christ and railroad men. This railroad work extends from Canada to the Gulf of Mexico, and across the continent from ocean to ocean, and has at present a membership of 70,000. There is a separate department for soldiers and sailors operating throughout the United States and in Cuba and Porto Rico, and the Philippine Islands, in most cases occupying Government property assigned for its use; another for miners and lumber-men; while there are distinct organizations for work among men out of employment, young men in need of rescue from vicious surroundings, coloured people and Indians, young men in non-Christian lands, and, most promising of all, a finely equipped special department and organization for work among boys between twelve and eighteen."

With so liberal an outlook, it is easy to see why the movement has made such enormous strides during the war. Here was a ready-made organization, officered by educated men, who were animated with the driving force of religious convictions, ready to turn their hand to the practical activities which the soldier's needs made manifest.

REFERENCES

Life of Sir George Williams, by J. E. H. Williams, 1908.
Year Books of the American Y.M.C.A.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER II

THE Y.M.C.A. COLLEGE AND Y.M.C.A. POLICY

At some stage in its career, it became evident to those who conducted the Y.M.C.A. that enthusiasm and goodwill alone did not make an efficient secretary or leader of men; such a one must possess knowledge, and ordered knowledge, so that he can better appreciate other men's difficulties and inclinations and adapt his own conduct accordingly. After a number of attempts to provide training, a college was established at Springfield, Massachusetts, which I understand has passed through the vicissitudes and difficulties which beset all institutions which are seeking to do sound work, and has finally reached its present position by the natural process of trial and experiment and the assessment of success and failure. Springfield College is practically a Religious University; it is recognized as a college by the Legislature of the State of Massachusetts, and by Charter is enabled to grant degrees in humanics and in physical education, the degrees granted being Bachelor and Master of Humanics and Bachelor and Master of Physical Education. Courses have also been devised for country work and boys' work. All four courses are now of four years' duration after four years' training in a high school.

The use of the word University has been avoided, because it is the practice in the United States to call

Digitized by Google

educational institutions which deal with a limited number of subjects colleges, even though the work is done on the University plan; in other words, the strict use of the word Universities is retained. Thus the Massachusetts Institute of Technology is not usually called a University, but it is to all intents and purposes a very large and fine Engineering University. In like manner Springfield College is a University in Humanics, if the term is permitted. It is much better, however, to adhere to the American practice and use the word "College."

The object of this college as officially stated is the study of the nature of man from the point of view of his body, of his mind, and from the spiritual point of view. Diplomas are granted for a three-years' course and arrangements are made with other universities for certain reciprocal advantages. The college is situated on the shores of Lake Massasoit, and its campus and grounds consist of sixty-five acres of land close to the city. It possesses the usual accessories of an American University—library, gymnasium, swimming-baths, playing-fields, and the like.

Now, it is worth while to set out the secretarial course leading to the degree of Bachelor of Humanics, and the Physical course leading to the degree of Bachelor of Physical Education:

SECRETARIAL COURSE

FRESHMEN

	Hours per week.	Terms.
Biology	5	2
Field Science (laboratory course)	3	3
Advanced English	5	3
Physiology and Hygiene	5	3
Personal Ethics	3	1
Teacher Training	2	1

Digitized by Google

	Hours per week.	Terms.
Association History	5	1
Playground Administration	5	1
Camp Craft	5	1

SOPHOMORE

New Testament	5	3
English Literature	5	3
Psychology	5	3
Municipal Sociology	5	1
Social Ethics	5	1
Sociology	5	1

JUNIOR

World Politics	5	1
World Sociology	5	1
Social Psychology	5	1
Comparative Religions	5	1
Church History	5	2
Business Administration	5	3
World Classics by Translation	5	2
Old Testament	5	1

SENIOR

Association Administration	5	3
Religious Education	5	3
Economics	5	1
History of Philosophy	5	1
Modern Religious Thought	5	1
Thesis	5	3

PHYSICAL COURSE

FRESHMEN

Biology	5	3
Field Science (laboratory course)	3	3
Advanced English	5	3
Personal Ethics	3	3
Teacher Training	2	1

Digitized by Google

	Hours per week.	Terms.
Association History	5	1
Mathematics and Physics	5	3
Playground Administration	5	1

SOPHOMORE

Anatomy	5	2
Chemistry	5	3
Psychology	5	3
History Physical Training	5	1
Personal Hygiene	5	1
Massage and First Aid	5	1
Municipal Sociology	5	1

JUNIOR

Physiology	5	3
New Testament	5	3
Anthropometry and Physical Examination	5	1
Building and School Hygiene	5	1
Public Hygiene	5	1
Church History	5	2
Old Testament	5	1

SENIOR

Physiology and Exercise	5	1
Diagnosis and Prescription	5	1
Association Administration	5	1
Religious Education	5	3
English Literature	5	2
Athletic Administration	5	1
Medical Gymnastics (Elective)	5	1
Thesis	5	3

It may be said in passing that the two courses of study here set out might well be adopted by the Australian Universities, so far as the secular part of the work is concerned. The Australian Universities are secular Universities, possessing in some instances religious colleges, and I can imagine nothing more likely to

Digitized by Google

advance Australian social life than the production of graduates trained on some such model as that set out. Australia, like so many portions of the British Empire, suffers seriously in public life from the presence of well-intentioned men who have not had an adequate training.

To revert, however, to the Springfield College. The curriculum set out represents, as all such statements do, the dry-bones of the business. This formal work is associated with normal practice work in many directions, and the situation of Springfield renders it possible to accomplish many and varying activities in the surrounding industrial district. It need hardly be pointed out to those who are seriously interested that the chief value of a training of the kind is the production of a receptive mind in people quick to apply the lessons learnt in one direction to a new field. For example, the American Y.M.C.A. undertakes railway work on a most extensive scale; it provides housing and social comfort for the engine-driver at the end of a long run so that he can enjoy food, sleep, and social advantages prior to his return run the following day. Once the desirability of such an arrangement becomes obvious to any trained mind, similar arrangements are certain to be made in so many other directions. It needs but little imagination to realize the effect made on enthusiastic young men at the impressionable period of life, on being brought into contact with the scientific element which underlies the multitudinous and very practical activities of the Y.M.C.A., by those who have done the work, who have surveyed the problem deliberately, and who do not allow enthusiasm to overpower their sense of reason.

Some details of this curriculum repay consideration.

Digitized by Google

The details of the course of the social sciences is worth producing in full :

OUTLINE OF COURSES

1. SOCIAL ANATOMY AND PHYSIOLOGY. (*Sociology*) A. Analysis of School Organization. B. Formulation of Laws of Social Progress. CHENEY.	1. SOCIAL BIOLOGY AND EMBRYOLOGY. A. Primitive Society. B. Beginners of Arts and Industries. C. Social Evolution. BURR.
2. SOCIAL PSYCHOLOGY. A. The Group Mind. B. Psychic Factors in Civilization. C. Agents of Social Control. BURR.	2. SOCIAL PHYSIOLOGY. (*Economics*) A. Wealth Production. B. Wealth Consumption. C. Wealth Distribution. D. Wealth Finance. BURR.
3. SOCIAL ETHICS. A. Development of Social Standards. B. The Social Conscience. C. Social Justice. CHENEY.	3. SOCIAL HYGIENE. (*Problems of the Twentieth-Century City*) A. The City of Civilization. B. City Problems : 1. Administration. 2. Health. 3. Morals. 4. Education. CHENEY.

Very little imagination is required to realize what social progress might be made if town clerks and public officials in Australia had the opportunity of such a training as this.

Similarly, the syllabus in Sociology is well worth consideration. There is not a problem in city life that is not dealt with on formal and scientific lines.

Digitized by Google

The Y.M.C.A. secretary is expected to be broadly and sympathetically educated, and so we find that world politics is one of the subjects required in the course, as the following schedule shows:

JUNIOR YEAR, FALL TERM, FIVE HOURS PER WEEK, 65 POINTS OR 6½ UNITS

1. Summary of European History since 1815:
   (1) Development of France.
   (2) Development of England.
   (3) Development of Germany.
   (4) Development of Italy.
   (5) Development of Austria-Hungary.
   (6) Development of Russia.
2. Problems of the Near East:
   (1) The Balkans.
   (2) The Ottoman Empire.
3. Problems of the Far East:
   (1) Japan.
   (2) China.
   (3) India.
4. The United States and World Politics:
   (1) In relation to Europe.
   (2) In relation to the Orient.
   (3) In relation to South America and Mexico.
   (4) In relation to Canada.

It will surprise also those who have not come into contact with this work to find that there is a special course in Rural Sociology, in which the problems of country life are dealt with, and it will still further surprise English-speaking people to find there is a Professor of Football and other games, that the various

Digitized by Google

games are studied from every point of view, and further that the same professor undertakes to give instruction in dancing, such dances as the hornpipe, Morris, and Russian dances being dealt with.

I understand that Springfield College has passed through a good many vicissitudes, as any developing educational institution must, and particularly one which rests on a religious basis. One of the most interesting features of its career is furnished by the fact that a Theological Professor was sharply criticized for a comprehensive statement of theological teaching from many and critical points of view; in other words, he was attacked not for what he taught, but for his statement of the position of religious criticism. A commission was appointed to inquire into the matter, and upheld him in his attitude.

The graduates of this University are sent to many parts of the world, and to a very great extent the secretaries and physical directors of the Association are trained graduates. For example Dr. Deaver, who has been of such service in connection with physical education in Egypt, is a Bachelor of Physical Education, Springfield College. Those who have seen him at work, and have seen untrained men try to imitate him, realize the gulf which separates the gymnasium instructor from the Professor of Physical Education. As has been so often stated, the difference lies not so much in the way in which details are carried out, not so much in the method taught, but in the broad and receptive attitude produced by training, which manifests itself in mental mobility and quick adaptation to new conditions.

As previously stated, I have given this sketchy account of the American Y.M.C.A. and of its college because it furnishes a type which is certain to be copied with

Digitized by Google

modifications in other countries. The principles on which it is organized appear to be quite sound; and though Springfield colleges and Y.M.C.A. organizations in other countries are certain to differ from the American model, both the English and American models are certain to make their impress felt when new constructive work is undertaken.

There are other training colleges in the United States associated with the Y.M.C.A. There is one in Chicago, known as the Y.M.C.A. College, where a three-years course of education is provided, and I believe there are other training centres also. I have, however, limited consideration to the Springfield College, because it is well known and because it furnishes a suitable type.

Y.M.C.A. Policy

In concluding these introductory sketches it is necessary to refer briefly to the conflict of thought which is evidently taking place in the minds of some earnest Y.M.C.A. supporters. As already pointed out, the Y.M.C.A. began as a religious organization designed to meet the spiritual needs of young men, and, as already stated, in 1916 the Annual Convention in the United States reaffirmed the Paris declaration which is the formal determination of that convention; but as time has passed by, what may be called the purely philanthropic side of the work has attained enormous proportions, and a number of its members evidently are afraid that the spiritual side of the work will disappear, and the Y.M.C.A. will become a philanthropic agency. Time will show whether they are right or wrong, but this may be said with certainty, that there are a very large number of thoughtful people in the world, essentially religious in their outlook in the best sense of the term, who find

Digitized by Google

themselves quite unable to solve the problem of their relationship to the rest of the universe; for it is this attempted definition which constitutes what is usually designated religious belief. The attempted definition varies with nationality, upbringing, social circumstances, and numberless other conditions. As the basis of any solution is faith and not reason, it follows that there is never any real agreement between all men on the subject. Consequently some people frankly give up any further attempt at solution. They find very little satisfaction in religious ceremonial and the sensuous adjuncts of an established church; the organ, choir, and the stained-glass window no longer convey the impressions they did; on the other hand, they turn to a world full of iniquities, inequalities, and of sorrow, and they take up the attitude that in the organized attempt to minimize these evils and to produce betterment they have more than sufficient scope for deep religious feeling. Such people find in the Y.M.C.A. an instrument ready to hand which provides the necessary vehicle for the dispersion of their activities. It is certain that this feeling is growing. It is certain that all churches will undergo modification in response to it, and what the older type of man may think is lost in one way may be more than gained in another.

Of this everyone may rest assured, that religious beliefs and religious practices are not immune from the general law of change, and that it is quite certain that the views held to-day will not be the views held a century hence, judging from the experience in the past. Principles may be immutable, but their interpretation is certain to be altered. At the present time, the following may be regarded as the final statement of the present position of the Y.M.C.A.:

Digitized by Google

"The Y.M.C.A. claims to be frankly interdenominational and not undenominational. All Christians are welcome without discrimination or partiality. Co-operation in the general work of the Association, as well as in religious services, is to be such as in nowise to imply any sacrifice of principle or reducing of doctrine. No attempt to detach men from their respective allegiance is sanctioned or authorized. Rather, every encouragement must be given to them to persevere and develop in their allegiance. It is contrary to the whole purpose of the Y.M.C.A. that the Association should become a substitute for the worship and corporate life of any church or denomination."

I trust that enough has now been said about the organization and the scope of the Y.M.C.A. to make its position in the world intelligible to those who, like myself, until recently knew little or nothing about it. A simpler task now lies before me of setting out in a matter-of-fact way precisely what the position was in Egypt before the war, and the war work undertaken by the Y.M.C.A. during the last four years.

Before commencing this description I propose briefly to indicate the nature of the association between the Churches and the Y.M.C.A.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER III

THE RELATIONSHIP OF THE Y.M.C.A. TO THE CHURCHES IN EGYPT

REFERENCE must be made to the relationship of the Y.M.C.A. in Egypt to the churches, a matter which has given very little difficulty but did require some definition, and I propose to tell the story in the words of members of the Church themselves. There now follows an account of a conference held in Cairo on April 3, 1917, between representatives of the Church and representatives of the Y.M.C.A. under the chairmanship of the Bishop in Jerusalem.

Present: The Right Reverend the Lord Bishop in Jerusalem, Major Kirk, S.C.F. (Church of England), Major Phillpott, S.C.F. (Wesleyan), Capt. Murray, C.F. (Presbyterian); Capt. Munro, C.F. (Wesleyan); Dr. S. M. Zwemer (American Mission); Mr. George Swan (Egypt General Mission); Mr. W. Jessop (General Secretary Y.M.C.A.); and Mr. S. Crouch, Mr. G. W. Shapley, Rev. Oswald Chambers, Rev. R. D. Downes, Mr. P. W. Mountain, Mr. A. W. Bradley, Mr. J. H. Edwards, Mr. S. N. Barling, Y.M.C.A. Secretaries.

The Bishop in Jerusalem opened the Conference with the Scripture reading and prayer.

In introducing the subject Mr. Jessop said:

We are really met together this morning to consider the relation, both now and after the war, between the Y.M.C.A. and the Churches. How can the Association best serve the

Digitized by Google

Churches? How can the Churches best use the Association for the extension of Christ's Kingdom? Mr. E. C. Carter, who is now attached to the National Council in London, has been appealing to the Churches for new workers, and recently sent me a long letter on the subject, making a strong plea for a closer relationship between the Association and the Churches and the army chaplains. Mr. Carter approached the leaders of the Scottish Churches, the two archbishops in England, and also appeared before the National Free Church Council. The Scottish Council have already given 250 men to the Y.M.C.A., and the Baptist Union of Great Britain is uniting congregations in order to release some of its ministers. These men will not come as chaplains or ministers, but as Y.M.C.A. workers to do our ordinary camp work amongst the men. Complaints have come from some ministers in the past that they have had too much menial work to do in our huts, but the men who are now offering themselves to us are prepared to do anything to serve the men. Papers blow about the huts and have to be picked up, the hut and furniture have to be continually cleaned, and refreshments have to be served. We have had to point out to our men that while in the service of the Y.M.C.A. they should do whatever is needed. There is sometimes a great deal of religion in serving tea or cocoa—the sympathetic personal touch means so much. In a letter to all my fellow-workers I dealt with the matter very fully and urged the secretaries to go more than half-way to enlist each chaplain in whatever part of the work he can render most service, and to let them all have a fresh intimation that their help is urgently desired. At our last Conference, when only our own workers were present, the following resolution was passed:

> "That we shall aim for the largest spirit of active and practical co-operation between the Churches and the Association."

In other words, we want to make much more vital and effective our acknowledged relationship to the Church. That there is need of making this principle more widely operative and particularly of coming to a realization of what is involved in co-operation with the Church, there can be no question, at least in the minds of those who have been in a position to hear the comments of leaders of the Churches. Whether certain of the

Digitized by Google

leaders of these Churches are right or wrong in their contention that the Association is not serving the various Christian Communities as largely and as effectively as it should, there is sufficient cause to justify our putting forth efforts to promote a better understanding and a more satisfactory working relationship. It is most gratifying to point out the large number of men who have been led to Christ and into the Churches through the instrumentality of the Association and with the splendid co-operation of chaplains in these months since the war began. But the Association cannot fulfil its interdenominational function simply by being of service to the Church; it must be in vital co-operation with the Church, and must work earnestly on the problem of the most effective relationship of the Association to the Christian Church, not only for the duration of the war, but for the period of reconstruction that will follow.

The Y.M.C.A. can never become another denomination. Our responsible leaders are determined that our organization shall continue to be as truly interdenominational as the Edinburgh Continuation Committee or the Student Christian Movement. There have been individual Associations that have not been truly interdenominational—some have been dominated by enthusiastic members of one or another of the Churches, but fortunately the majority of the Associations and the leaders of the movement have remained true to the fundamental principles which are truly interdenominational. They have sought to make Anglicans more loyal Anglicans, Presbyterians more useful Presbyterians, and Free Churchmen more serviceable Free Churchmen. They have maintained that while the things that unite us are more important than those which divide, the things which do divide are not to be lightly brushed aside, but are to be frankly recognized, because to thoughtful men in all the denominations the spiritual and intellectual heritage of their own communions means a great deal.

We do not stand for denominational neutrality, though this does not mean that we (as laymen) cannot work for the time when some of our present differences will cease, and a much greater spirit of church unity prevail. I will close by giving an extract of an address by the Ven. Archdeacon Cody of Toronto given to Y.M.C.A. workers in May 1916. He said:

"The Y.M.C.A. is not a denomination; it is not a rival of the Church of Christ; it is not a substitute for the Church of

Digitized by Google

Christ. On the other hand, *it is not* simply a clean and decent social club. The Young Men's Christian Association ideally is one of the integral parts and agencies of the Christian Church."

Mr. Jessop then asked for a frank discussion and for any criticisms or suggestions.

Bishop MacInnes then said: Speaking for myself, I cannot say that I have heard that the Y.M.C.A. takes, as a whole, any other position than that which has been stated here. I do not think anybody has any question or doubt about the actual standing or position of the Y.M.C.A.

Mr. Jessop: It has been said that the Y.M.C.A. has been taking the place of the Church in the lives of some of our men. There is this fear on the part of certain people, but so far as I know I have never seen this spirit in any of the Associations with which I have been connected.

The Bishop: Just such criticisms as these must of course be dealt with in order to judge the position after the war. Tens of thousands of men have been brought in touch with the Y.M.C.A. Then there are the thousands or more Y.M.C.A. huts; what are we going to do with them? Will there not be a demand for such work? This will undoubtedly create a difficult situation. I personally have no fear as to the outcome, but it is obvious that effort will be needed to meet such a situation. Imagine the position when the Y.M.C.A. comes in where the Churches (Anglican or Free) have no practical life—it is easy to see that it must have some effect on these Churches. Nobody I know charges the Y.M.C.A. with endeavouring to start a new denomination.

Mr. Jessop: Speaking of the future of the Y.M.C.A.; as the men have met in our huts during the war, so when it is over and they return to their home towns they will need some social centre besides the public-houses where they can go and talk over their war experiences. The leaders at home are planning to have the Y.M.C.A. huts for this purpose, but only in co-operation with the Churches and in no way to interfere with the regular church services.

Chaplain Phillpott: It *must* interfere with the Churches. In my young days my conscience was relieved after attending a Y.M.C.A. meeting. I am not sure that the Y.M.C.A. may ot be the means of emptying the Churches, say in 500 years!!!

Digitized by Google

When you have Y.M.C.A. meetings in Cairo you take away certain men from the Churches.

Mr. Downes: This would not be so if the Church services were more interesting and more free—similar to Y.M.C.A. meetings.

The Bishop: I do not see how with the best intention they can avoid clashing. There is the question of the comfortable room and the attractiveness of the Y.M.C.A.; no man can be expected to leave it if the church is less attractive.

Mr. Downes: If the various clergymen and ministers visited the Y.M.C.A. during the week and sought out their own men it would be different.

Dr. Zwemer: We shall have the best results if we first discuss principles. Are we quite sure of the principles? The Y.M.C.A. has had to face criticism in two ways—on the one side that the Y.M.C.A. has really omitted the word "Christian" and so Christians who live close to Christ are sometimes aloof from the Association. The other criticism is on the part of those who are Churchmen and naturally consider that "the denomination" so called that does not have sacraments should not take the place in the lives of people that rightly belongs to Churches. If one of these criticisms is true, the other is false. The relation between the Y.M.C.A. and the Church must be *close* and vital, it can neither be casual nor weak. The Y.M.C.A. is a branch of the Church at work, and that branch will absolutely die the death if it ever severs connection with the Church. Especially in a city like Cairo, where we see the Y.M.C.A. has done such splendid work, it would be impossible to eliminate the Christian Ideal, for as soon as you do that you automatically kill the Y.M.C.A. and you cut off its natural light and strength. I would like to believe that all the Y.M.C.A. secretaries at home and abroad endorse this principle.

This relationship should be reciprocal. For instance, the American Mission owes a debt to the Association, and vice versa the Y.M.C.A. owes a debt to the American Mission. It is here that we sometimes find friction. I entirely agree with Chaplain Phillpott as to the public services of the Churches in that the Y.M.C.A. should not attempt to clash. I consider that the Churches should stand publicly for the good work of the Y.M.C.A. just as the Y.M.C.A. should aid the Churches in the same way, and also by the use of the local press. We should admit each other's work. I think we sometimes fail. The Roman

Digitized by Google

Catholic soldiers in the army have a new respect for the evangelical presentation of the Gospel given by those who speak in the Y.M.C.A. The time has come for the Y.M.C.A. to secure also the sympathy of the Coptic and Greek Churches.

Our stationery says "Y.M.C.A. *with* the E.E.F."; our relations with the army are very close, we work with them and for them, every man is served. We might also say "Y.M.C.A. with the Holy Catholic Church Militant," and make no mistake. We are not the Church Militant, but are working with it. Even as we would not dare to have our programme interfere with the E.E.F., so we are subsidiary to the main movement of the Church. I believe in the Y.M.C.A., but I cannot believe it will reach its highest ideals, fulfil its greatest ambitions and secure the best results, unless it is working closely with the Church of Christ in every way.

Chaplain Phillpott: I rejoice in the work of the Y.M.C.A. I personally believe that the day is not very far hence when the present organized forms will pass away, and we shall have to build up some more. I welcome all that the Y.M.C.A. is doing for our men, but I will from my own point of view make a few suggestions:

I have felt that there was a tendency to be perfectly independent in the Y.M.C.A. The Y.M.C.A. ought to have a committee of Church Members, and an address should be given from time to time as to what is entailed by becoming a member of a Church.

Every effort should be made to avoid meetings clashing with existing meetings. I know there has been considerable interference in my own meetings and weekly social.

Then the Y.M.C.A. workers should all avoid criticism of the Churches, chaplains, and leaders. Nothing is gained and it is not the work of the Y.M.C.A. to criticize chaplains. I myself heard through a Y.M.C.A. agency that they were to hold a meeting to discuss the work of the chaplains.

Why not make all the use of us that you can? In the early days I was often speaking for the Y.M.C.A., and should now be glad to give an address sometimes, but the organization has grown so vast and you have so many wise men that you pass me by. I do think that you might make a great deal more use of the chaplains. I rejoice in the work of the Y.M.C.A., and think it may be the final form of Christianity.

Digitized by Google

Mr. Swan: I just want to give a few remarks as a layman. The problems of reconstruction after the war are extremely vital, and they should occupy the mind and thought of the prayer life of everyone who loves the Church of Christ. Thank God, there are great and good men who are considering these problems. I want to make a few suggestions that may seem very radical.

One of the great problems of the future is the tendency to make the one-man Church. We all agree that the Church should be an organization of Christian workers, with the ordained man as leader. The laymen ought to be led to soul-saving Christian work, and when you do that your Churches' organization will grow out of the Church itself. The C.M.S., the Bible Society, etc., were all started by laymen, and after the war it is up to the Churches to see that the Y.M.C.A. is a natural outlet for the Christian activities of their members, and not the feared menace to more or less moribund Churches.

The Church ought to weed out all its ineffective workers, and I do not see why ordination should necessarily keep the Church full of men who cannot reach men spiritually, and who can never speak the words of life to people. Is it not possible for the Churches to face this question of weeding out ineffectives?

Chaplain Kirk asked that the secretaries should report to respective chaplains of any decisions of which they knew, and also that, if possible, devotional rooms should be set apart for the use of chaplains.

Chaplain Murray said: "I come from the Highlands where the Y.M.C.A. was once hardly known, but I can safely say now that it has the full commendation of our people. The reason is your stationery and everything you provide for the benefit of our men, and the good reports the boys send home from the front of the work you are doing there. Another reason is that it is interdenominational. Our people regard it as a part of their work, as a part of our Churches' work, and the result is that our people help with a will in the work. The Churches have released hundreds of young ministers; we have sent our best men. These men have been stirred by the good work of the Y.M.C.A., and I feel that the co-operation is ideal and complete, and I only wish it were possible to establish as cordial relations between the various Churches. We all look upon the Y.M.C.A. as a practical way in which we may help as Christians.

Digitized by Google

The cause of the Y.M.C.A. reaching this mark is the battle-field, and that will be removed; there will not be the same need for the Association as a separate organization. There will, however, be need for it. I am determined to do everything possible to get a Y.M.C.A. hut in my place; they will need after the war a Christian club, they have grown up with it.

Mr. Edwards referred to the closeness of his identity with the Church and the personal debt he owed, and emphasized the fact that the Church was the divine organization established on earth by Christ, "but," said he, "while the Church is divine, its ministers, after all, are human, some very much so, and if this were true of ministers it is surely true of General Secretaries of the Y.M.C.A. The principle of loyalty, however, cannot be always measured by the statement of any one individual, but rather by a policy—national or international. The policy of the Y.M.C.A. is that it is the 'servant' of the Church, and anything that the Association does is done by the Church because it is the workers of the Church doing the work through the Y.M.C.A. organization." He emphasized the latter claim by stating that the glory of it all is in and through the Church, for all are "Church" workers. After all, the work is so big that the minor differences should be met in a friendly spirit, then they will often disappear.

Dr. Zwemer moved informally a resolution in the following terms:

> "That we request the various Y.M.C.A. secretaries at a fitting opportunity to have an address given to their men on the relation of the Y.M.C.A. to the Church, and we also ask leaders of the Churches in Egypt to reciprocate by a sermon or address on the work of the Y.M.C.A."

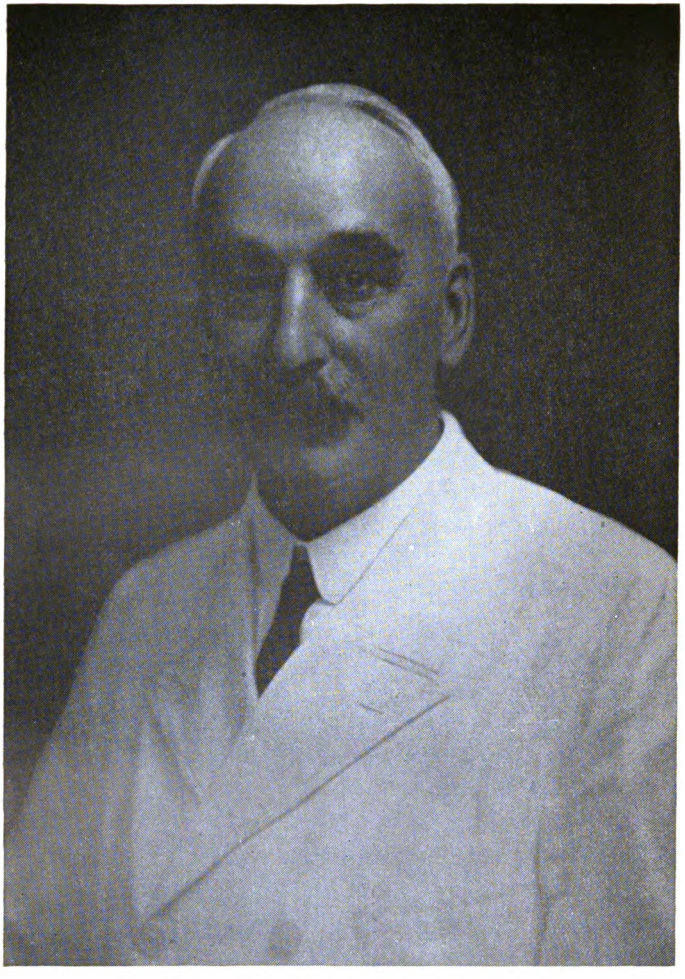
This resolution was put to the meeting and carried.

After the benediction by the Bishop the meeting adjourned.

The foregoing requires no comment from me. The account of the proceedings of the Conference tells its own tale.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google



Mr. R. E. Monteith-Smith, O.B.E.
Chairman of the Finance Committee of the Y.M.C.A. in Egypt.

[*To face page* 29

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER IV

EGYPT BEFORE THE WAR

Mr. William Jessop, O.B.E., General Secretary of the Y.M.C.A. in Egypt, was born at Bolton, Lancs., England, and went early to Canada. Attracted by service in the Y.M.C.A., he was trained at Springfield College, and became a Y.M.C.A. secretary, being appointed in 1896 to Summit, New Jersey. In 1903 he went to Brandford, Ontario, and in 1906 was made General Secretary of the Central Association, Washington. In 1910 he was transferred to the foreign department, and became secretary of the Chowinghee Branch in Calcutta, India. After three successful years in Calcutta, he was returning to the United States, and was asked to examine the conditions in Egypt, where a Y.M.C.A. had been started. Mr. Jessop found a small organization in Cairo, and set to work to improve it.

It consisted of a fairly extensive flat in the fifth floor of St. David's Buildings—a modern business flat. This provided residential quarters for about thirty men, offices, a small billiard room, a library, and a small lounge. These rooms provided a meeting-place for members of the Y.M.C.A. and a number of social advantages. In addition to the religious meetings the Y.M.C.A. arranged a Debating Society, a Camera Club, and Night Clubs in French, besides other activities.

The Association also procured the lease of a piece of land at Ghezireh which was named, after Sir William

Digitized by Google

Willcocks, "The Willcocks Ground." Its use was limited to Englishmen and Americans. The Y.M.C.A. have spent £1,000 on this recreation ground in fitting out cricket, football, tennis courts, and a club house.

At that time the Y.M.C.A. was purely an Anglo-American Branch, and up to the time of the outbreak of war nothing had been done to found Associations for other nationalities.

An Arabic Y.M.C.A. which is still in existence has no connection at present with the Anglo-American Branch.

The English and American community outside the Army of Occupation numbered about 3,000, including women and children. In Port Said there was the same need, but practically no accommodation and no secretary. Alexandria was exactly in the same position. The following programme for March 1914 gives an idea of the Y.M.C.A. activities in Cairo:

Sunday, 1st . .	9 p.m. Usual meeting for men. "Some Sudan Experiences," informal talk by Mr. F. Gregson.
Monday, 2nd . .	9 p.m. Debate.
Sunday, 8th . .	9 p.m. Address by the Rev. E. W. Green.
Monday, 9th . .	6.30 p.m. Management Committee Meeting.
Wednesday, 11th .	3 p.m. Children's lecture by Mr. H. Knox Shaw.
Thursday, 12th .	Residents' moonlight outing.
Friday, 13th . .	9 p.m. Illustrated lecture on "India," by Mr. W. Jessop.
Saturday, 14th .	9.15 p.m. Reception to the Rev. and Mrs. R. F. McNeile.
Sunday, 15th . .	9 p.m. Musical evening. Programme arranged by Mr. J. H. Scott.
Monday, 16th . .	9 p.m. Debate.
Sunday, 22nd .	9 p.m. Illustrated lecture on "Mount Sinai," by Mr. A. W. Sutton.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Mr. R. M. Grainger-Stewart.
Hon. Treasurer of the Y.M.C.A. in Egypt.

[*To face page* 31

Digitized by Google

Tuesday, 24th . .	5.30 p.m.	Lecture at the Continental Hotel by Sir Gaston Maspero, K.C.M.G. Subject: "The Condition of Woman in Pharaonic Egypt." Chairman: H. Farnall, Esq., C.G., C.M.G.
Thursday, 26th . .	9.15 p.m.	Annual Concert to be held in the Continental Hotel. Tickets P.T. 10 and P.T. 20. Members half price.
Friday, 27th . . .	9 p.m.	Lecture by Mr. F. M. Goadby. Subject: "The Quest of the Holy Grail."
Sunday, 29th . .	9 p.m.	Address by the Rev. H. J. Phillpott.
Monday, 30th . .	9 p.m.	Debate.

The Tennis Tournament has been an unqualified success, with 110 entries. Those responsible were: Messrs. Humphreys, Brown, Hayes, Allen, Douglas, and Randall.

The Camera Club has been duly organized, with Messrs. Rowntree, Boyd, and Colton as a Committee to promote its interest. A dark-room is being fitted up and soon the club will have adequate working quarters. If interested, hand in your name.

The Debating Club was successfully launched and held two interesting meetings last month. The members of the Committee are: Messrs. Astbury, Jenkins, Adam, and Hogan. Debates are held fortnightly and are open to all members of the Association.

Billiards handicap, open to all members. Entries close on March 6. Fee P. T. 5.

Please consider this an official invitation to the Reception to the Rev. and Mrs. R. F. McNeile on Saturday, March 14. Ladies included of course.

The position, then, when war broke out was that Mr. Jessop was in Cairo in charge of the Y.M.C.A. centre and was aided by committees which had the following composition:

Committee of Management.—Amis, T.; Bolland, A. P.; Bryan, E. Davies; Grainger-Stewart, R. M.; Har-

Digitized by Google

greaves, Dr. A. R.; Hayes, W. M.; Henry, Dr. F. H.; Hume, Dr. W. F.; MacDonald, P.; McGill, Rev. R. G.; Roberts, R. H.; Rowntree, H.; West, A.; Zwemer, Dr. S. M.

Advisory Committee.—Amos, M. Sheldon; Hopkins, J. F. G.; Monteith-Smith, R. G.; Willcocks, Sir William, K.C.M.G.

Officers.—Dr. Frank H. Henry, Chairman; E. Davies Bryan, Vice-Chairman; R. M. Grainger-Stewart, Hon. Treasurer; W. Jessop, Secretary.

At the outbreak of war, there was in Egypt a garrison of about 4,000 British soldiers, and a very small R.A.M.C. personnel, but very shortly troops began to arrive. Part of the 42nd Territorials (East Lancashires) reached Egypt at the end of September 1914, then early in December came the Indian troops to guard the Suez Canal, whilst in December the 1st Division of Australians and part of the 1st Division of New Zealanders arrived, so that by the end of 1914 there was plenty of food for thought.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER V

EGYPT IN 1914–1915

ABOUT a month after war broke out in Europe several of the units of the Army of Occupation were transferred to the front, and in September troops from India took their places. As some of these troops were put under canvas, the Y.M.C.A. at once began to look around for equipment in order to open work among them, but their stay was too short for anything to be done. In the latter part of September 20,000 Territorials reached Egypt and most of them were stationed in Cairo. The barracks accommodated all but about 5,000 who were encamped in the desert near Heliopolis. After the work of the day was over, the men in camp had nothing to do and nowhere to go outside their own crowded bell tents.

(*Report begins.*)

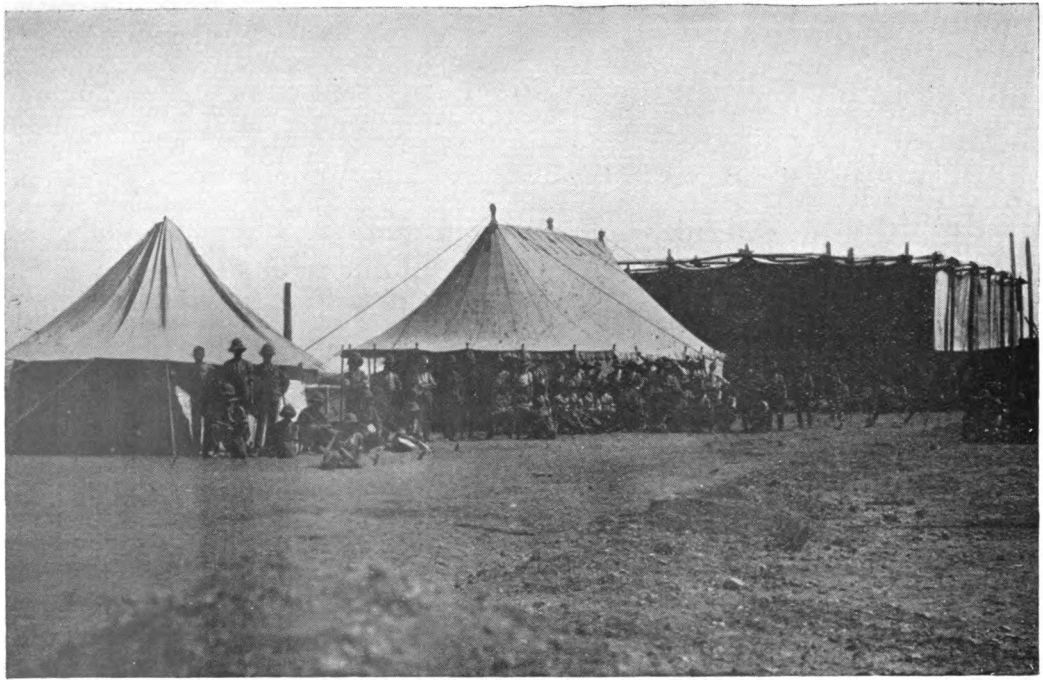
In four days the Y.M.C.A. had secured and erected a marquee which was filled with men writing letters home before the tent was properly in place and before forms and tables could be procured. Here stationery, pens, and ink could be had for the asking, and soon, through the kindness of friends, papers and magazines were put on the tables, a circulating library of 1,000 volumes collected, games of various kinds loaned to the men, and a piano hired. For three weeks before Government put a post office in the camp, we carried on one in this tent and from 1,500 to 2,000 letters were posted daily.

Digitized by Google

In the beginning the Y.M.C.A. efforts were seriously hampered by a lack of men and money, and for this reason they could not attempt work in any of the barracks. The regular Association force consisted of one secretary, who was responsible for the local branch as well as for this camp work; and if it had not been for the available assistance rendered at this time by members of the Egypt General Mission, the C.M.S., and the American Mission, the work would have been seriously crippled in its inception. Soon, however, a goodly number of honorary workers became interested and for many weeks spent a considerable part of their leisure time at the Heliopolis tent. In November a student from Oxford was sent by the English National Council to help, and at Christmas a second worker arrived. These two workers were associates at this centre until the beginning of March, and rendered excellent services, organizing sports, French classes, and various other attractions.

Meantime, early in December, 20,000 Australians and 10,000 New Zealanders arrived. The former brought four secretaries with them, but the latter had no Association leader. At the request of the General, we opened work in their camp, putting up one tent in the mounted lines and another in the infantry lines. Here again invaluable aid was rendered by the Egyptian General Mission, the American Mission, and C.M.S., as well as by some of the New Zealand chaplains. About the middle of January another 10,000 Australians arrived and were put under canvas about a mile beyond the Heliopolis camp. As this contingent had no secretary, we erected a large mat house in their lines and eagerly awaited the coming of five helpers from Scotland and one from England promised by the National Council.

Digitized by Google



FIRST Y.M.C.A. MARQUEE, HELIOPOLIS.

To face page 34]

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Meantime a refugee missionary from Turkey had joined the force. Thus, after four months, for the first time, all the centres were fully manned. Late in March a Maori contingent of 500 arrived and, by special request of the G.O.C. of the New Zealand Division, a large marquee was erected in time to welcome them. They remained, however, only a few days. Unfortunately most of the workers from the old country could stay for periods of only two and three months, and many changes became necessary. Others, however, came to take their places, and so the gaps were filled.

When the work was started the treasury was empty. During the first month about £120 was contributed in Cairo, including £40 raised at a meeting held by ladies interested. Later £40 came from England for Territorials in sums varying from 1*s.* to £10. These contributions were in response to a letter written for the Lancashire papers by a Lancashire woman resident in Cairo. Then a grant was made to Egypt by the English National Council, and money was also received from America, New Zealand, and various other sources. Our need, however, was very great. Stationery and supplies alone cost for the four centres £75 per month. More than 600,000 sheets of paper were used in seven months. Waste in this direction was carefully guarded against. It is quite safe to say that 75 per cent. of the letters written home would never have gladdened the hearts of parents and friends had the Y.M.C.A. not put the materials ready to the hands of the young soldiers. Post cards and souvenir books were sold as well as postage stamps, packages were put up, money changed in fair rates, Christmas gifts purchased, information given, and everything possible was done for the comfort and convenience of the soldiers. An average of

Digitized by Google

one and oftentimes two lectures a week were given at each centre by men who are authorities on the subject presented by them. Weekly concerts were also given. At a moonlight concert over 2,000 soldiers were present, and at almost every gathering in the tents the audience numbered from 500 to 1,000 men. Sing-songs were very popular. Interesting sports were also arranged from time to time, including boxing contests, races of various kinds, football, and donkey polo. The religious aspect of the work was noteworthy. At Heliopolis, before the large tent was put up, devotional meetings were held every evening in the open air. During that period about 2,500 pocket Testaments were distributed, and 500 cards signed, the men thus signifying their desire to lead Christian lives. Since then over 5,500 Testaments have been given in the barracks and various camps.

The work could not be carried on without much expenditure. As was said before, supplies alone cost £75 a month. Hire of tents, messing for helpers, travelling expenses, etc., brought the expenses up to £200 per month during three months of activity. The average for the seven months was £150 per month.

(*Report ends.*)

The following letters of appreciation were received.

"Major-General Sir Alexander Godley, K.C.M.G., General Officer Commanding New Zealand Expeditionary Force, wrote:

"'During our four months' stay in Egypt, the men of my command have received an extraordinary amount of help from you and your staff. Your efforts to provide shelter, refreshments, facilities for correspond-

Digitized by Google

ence, literature, etc., have been wonderfully successful, and I am very glad to express to you how much we are all indebted to you and your Association for making our stay here such a pleasant one.'

"Colonel H. G. Chauvel, Commanding Officer, 1st Australian Light Horse Brigade, wrote:

"'I should like to place on record my appreciation of the work which is being done by your Association in the camp of my Brigade.

"'Your efforts in providing amusements and club life within the lines, have not only led to the comfort and convenience of the non-commissioned officers and men, but have been of great assistance to the officers.'

"Lieut.-Colonel J. F. Esson, A.Q.M.G., New Zealand and Australian Division, wrote:

"'The excellent provision made by your institution for our troops at Zeitoun and Heliopolis Camps is so highly appreciated that the General Officer Commanding would be glad to know that it is proposed to continue the service, and if we shall find you at our base when we go to the front.

"'As you are aware, a considerable number of reinforcements will be kept in waiting at the base, and these in addition to the Base Staff afford an opportunity for doing good.'"

Such, then, was the position in the early part of 1915. When the Australian group of hospitals at Heliopolis began to develop in March and April 1915, the visitation and distribution of comforts to the sick and wounded were very largely undertaken by a group of ladies and

Digitized by Google

gentlemen resident in Egypt together with a few Australian visitors, who were organized by Mrs. Elgood, but certain additional phases of activity were covered by the Y.M.C.A., though paid for by the Australian Red Cross. The Australian Red Cross erected recreation huts at the 1st Australian General Hospital, at Luna Park, and other places. The Y.M.C.A. to a large extent fitted the huts with games, libraries, writing paper, and the like, and sent their workers to take charge of them. As the hospitals extended to Helouan and to Alexandria, at both of which places convalescents were, in the main, cared for, even more extensive work was done. At the Ras el Tin Convalescent Hospital, a large hut erected in the centre of the hospital square was fitted with libraries and the usual conveniences, and cared for by Dr. Kennedy, a Y.M.C.A. worker at Alexandria. Similar arrangements were made at Helouan.

The steady increase of the work and the peculiar social conditions in Cairo made very much more extensive action necessary, and resulted in the formation of two soldiers' clubs, one at Alexandria and one in the Esbekieh Gardens, Cairo. "The Esbekieh," as it is known now in many parts of the world, has attained such enormous proportions, and has been of such extraordinary service, that I propose to deal with it in a separate chapter, but the increasing importance of this social work for soldiers caused H.E. Sir Henry MacMahon, the High Commissioner for Egypt, to convene a meeting at the Residency, to consider the problem as a whole. The minutes of this meeting are as follow:

"Minutes of a meeting of the Y.M.C.A. Army Work Committee for Egypt and the Near East, held at

Digitized by Google

the Residency, Cairo, on Thursday, May 13, 1915, at 6.30 p.m.

"Present were: His Excellency Sir Henry MacMahon in the chair; Mr. J. J. Virgo, General Secretary of the London Y.M.C.A.; Sir Reginald Oakes, Chairman of Directors of Heliopolis Syndicate; Dr. F. H. Henry, President Y.M.C.A. Cairo; A. Lucas, Esq., Treasurer; W. Jessop, Secretary of the Local Association; Col. G. W. Kendrew, Senior Chaplain to the Australian Imperial Forces in Egypt; R. E. Monteith-Smith, Esq., of the Ministry of the Interior; R. M. Grainger-Stewart, Esq., Manager of National Bank of Egypt; Dr. S. M. Zwemer, Editor of *Moslem World*; Dr. S. H. Kennedy; Rev. J. K. Thomson, M.A.; P. Diack, M.A.; R. R. Way; G. W. Shapley.

"His Excellency in referring to the Y.M.C.A. work stated that he had been associated with it for many years. In India he had seen evidences of its great work during peace times; since the outbreak of the war he had seen it in the training camps in England, and with the troops at the front—in France, and here in Egypt. There was no association or institution that he knew of where such business acumen was displayed, nor where money was better used than that of the Y.M.C.A.

"Mr. Virgo of London spoke of the effort made by the local Association to cope with the tremendous task of serving 60,000 troops landed in Egypt soon after the declaration of war, and of the splendid manner in which they met the situation in co-operation with the Australian secretaries.

"He also outlined the gradual growth of the Association and its world-wide influence. He stated that His Majesty King George had commended it—and Lord Kitchener showed his appreciation by granting

Digitized by Google

permission to accompany the forces to France, where forty centres have been established.

"Dr. Zwemer spoke of the splendid response the Association made to meet the need of the troops in Egypt. As he was soon to leave for the U.S.A., he was authorized by the meeting to—whilst in America—interview those interested in Association work, with a view to securing their assistance towards obtaining a more central and convenient site for local work.

"The following Committees were appointed:

"Finance and Executive: R. E. Monteith-Smith; R. M. Grainger-Stewart; A. Lucas; W. Jessop.

"Administration: W. Jessop, General Secretary; J. K. Thomson, representing Great Britain; Gordon Green, representing Australia.

"The following Officers and General Committee were appointed: H.E. Sir Henry MacMahon, Chairman; Lieut.-Gen. Sir John G. Maxwell, K.C.B., Vice-Chairman; Lord Edward Cecil, K.C.M.G., D.S.O., etc.; R. M. Grainger-Stewart, Hon. Treasurer; William Jessop, General Secretary; Dr. S. M. Zwemer; M. Sheldon Amos; A. P. Bolland; Col. G. P. Elgood; Gordon Green; J. F. G. Hopkins; Dr. F. H. Henry; Dr. Kennedy; A. Lucas; R. E. Monteith-Smith; Sir Reginald Oakes; W. Owens; Lieut.-Col. W. G. Pridmore; Major-General H. E. Stanton; Lieut.-Comdr. V. Trumper; J. K. Thomson; The Bishop in Jerusalem and Senior Chaplains of the British and Australasian Expeditionary Forces.

"As a matter of fact, however, a small Finance and Executive Committee was formed for the transaction of routine work, which consisted of the following:

R. E. Monteith-Smith, Chairman; R. M. Grainger-Stewart, Hon. Treas.; G. B. Hicks, Hon. Treas. during

Digitized by Google

absence of above; Lord Radstock, English Nat. Council; Arthur H. Johnson, English Nat. Council; W. Owens, Australian Committee; G. W. Shapley, Australian Committee; P. M. Velvin, New Zealand Committee; Lt.-Col. Barrett, G. Elliott; A. Lucas, Hon. Sec.; W. Jessop, General Secretary.

"Sub-Committees have also been formed in Alexandria and Port Said, as follows:

"Alexandria: Dr. Alex Granville, C.M.G.; R. C. Abdy; C. S. Bell; A. J. Lowe; Dr. S. H. Kennedy, Secretary.

"Port Said: Lieut.-Comdr. V. Trumper; C. T. Hooper; H. E. Ching, and the Secretary."

Some reference, however, must be made to the part played by different countries in assisting this work. The Egyptian Y.M.C.A. work has always been cosmopolitan and occupies a collection of secretaries from almost every part of the world where the "Red Triangle" is in evidence. *The English National Council*, with Sir Arthur Yapp, K.B.E., as General Secretary, have kept up a steady supply of secretaries, and during the first year of the war sufficient men were sent by London to supply the wants of the colonial troops, as well as the English troops then in Egypt. The secretary for workers in London is Mr. W. H. Drake, and the selection of workers is made by him in consultation with his colleagues, all workers being sent to Y.M.C.A. Headquarters, Cairo, to be allocated. Naturally Egypt cannot choose men, and the English Council have supported the Y.M.C.A. loyally in this direction.

Mention should also be made of the enormous supplies of equipment sent by England as a gift to Egypt. At times the work would have been impossible but for

Digitized by Google

this help. Huts, marquees, tables, chairs, books, stationery, motor cars, besides large monetary grants, have been furnished by England.

Australian National Committee.—At the outbreak of war no National Australian Committee was in existence, but secretaries were sent away by the separate Associations. Under such conditions the fullest support possible could not be given, and therefore the National Committee was formed early in 1916, with representatives from each State. As in the case of the English Council all secretaries chosen for Egypt were then sent from Australia direct to Cairo. Since the formation of the National Committee, support has been given including grants for special huts, monthly contributions, and, what has been most appreciated, a number of secretaries, some of whom were loaned for work with English troops. Since the departure of the Australian Infantry, and the inrush of the English troops, the English Council have been unable to supply sufficient men and the Australian help has been most welcome.

New Zealand National Committee.—The New Zealand troops in Egypt are few, but the National Committee have also contributed men for general work as well as for the special New Zealand work. Financial support has also been given unstintingly.

The Indian National Council is becoming more interested every day, as the number of Indians increase in Egypt. Until a comparatively recent date the Association was not allowed to work for Indians, but now secretaries are being sent by India. The work is dealt with in another chapter.

International Committee of New York.—Men and money have been sent from the commencement of the war, and by large grants the International Committee

Digitized by Google

have made considerable enlargement of the work possible.

Without the help of each of the above, the work in Egypt would have been difficult, and perhaps impossible. All the before-mentioned committees recognize the general secretary and the Army Work Committee of Egypt.

The Commander-in-Chief, General Sir John G. Maxwell, who probably appreciated the difficulties of the position better than anyone else in Egypt, sent the following letter to the Y.M.C.A. on June 13, 1915, and shortly afterwards lent his powerful aid for the establishment of the Esbekieh and Alexandria clubs.

"ARMY HEAD-QUARTERS, CAIRO.

"The Y.M.C.A. in Egypt has done, and is doing, very good work amongst our soldiers in this country. They have been an indispensable and valuable reinforcement to the permanent institutions, and have devoted themselves to camps where their services are most needed. I feel sure they have earned the gratitude of all ranks, and have materially contributed to their welfare, amusement, and happiness. Their task has been made more difficult by the constant and sudden moves of troops, often putting them to what might appear useless expenditure, but this has been quite unavoidable; and I am sure of one thing, and that is, the Y.M.C.A. not only deserves, but should get material support from all those interested in the spiritual and material welfare of our soldiers.

"J. G. MAXWELL, Lieut.-Gen.,
"Commanding the Force in Egypt.

"*June* 13, 1915."

Digitized by Google

With the return of the sick and wounded from the Dardanelles, beginning on April 28, 1915, the problem had become intensified, and it remained acute throughout the year, as the constant stream of reinforcements, sick and wounded, and convalescents swept through Egypt. The work of the Y.M.C.A. was complicated further by the fact that they had to undertake what was possible at the Dardanelles, but that work will be dealt with in a separate chapter.

By the beginning of 1916 the Dardanelles campaign was finished, the period of passive defence of the Canal abandoned, and the advance into the desert was begun. A statement of the activities undertaken in Egypt, and the names of the officers who took part in them up to the end of 1916, will be found in Appendix I.

No account of the work done in this, or indeed in any other year, would be complete without reference to the intense and heavy work of Mrs. Jessop, who acted as a visitor to the Australian Hospitals during the crisis, and who not only first instituted an Inquiry Bureau, so that relatives might obtain information about the sick and wounded, but conducted it unaided for some considerable time.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER VI

SOLDIERS' CLUBS, 1915

DURING this year it became evident, even before the Dardanelles campaign, that when provision had been made in the various camps for the social activities and inclinations of the men, all had not been done that should have been done. When men were off duty and on leave they visited Cairo, Alexandria, or Port Said, as the case might be, and there they came in contact, in most cases for the first time, with the peculiarities of oriental or semi-oriental life. It must be remembered that Alexandria is essentially a cosmopolitan city, Levantine rather than Egyptian, that Port Said is still more cosmopolitan, whilst Cairo is essentially Egyptian, though perhaps less so than Tanta or Zagazig. The bulk of the troops were quartered near Cairo, and when fine vigorous men arrived from countries where discipline is conspicuous by its absence, and for the first time came into contact with these semi-oriental conditions, as might have been expected there was a good deal of trouble. There was a certain amount of drunkenness, and there was too much venereal disease. Both these phases have been exaggerated in the press, but nevertheless there was a difficulty, and there was an evil that had to be met. Various restrictive arrangements were made to limit the evil.

It was apparent that what was required was a central meeting-place in Cairo and in Alexandria, where all

Digitized by Google

legitimate wants could be gratified, and free from the presence of drunkenness and the presence of the prostitute or her agents. It was obvious to those concerned that men cannot be made moral by compulsion, since the effort is futile, but it is possible to give them a healthy, decent alternative, and let them choose for themselves, and on this policy the Y.M.C.A. embarked.

ALEXANDRIA.—In Alexandria the Y.M.C.A. did not possess a building, but the Alexandria corporation or municipality granted a site near the quay at a nominal rental, and the Y.M.C.A. found that a suitable building could be erected for about £1,000. They had, however, very little money, and the work was pressing. They found £250 and applied to the British Red Cross for help, on the grounds that the establishment would be used by convalescents as well as others. The Red Cross, which was then in course of organization, hesitated, cabled to London for instructions, and obtained authority to advance another £250. The matter was then submitted to Major-General Williams, the D.M.S. of the Australian Imperial Forces, who was also the Australian Red Cross Commissioner, and he sanctioned the payment of £500 in order that the work might be instantly begun. The building was commenced, was finished by September 1915, and was opened on September 11, 1915, by the High Commissioner for Egypt, His Excellency Sir Henry MacMahon, to whose earnest influence indeed the donation of the site and the successful raising of the money was largely due.

The following is the newspaper report (*Egyptian Gazette*, September 13, 1915) of the High Commissioner's speech on that occasion :

I have been invited this evening to undertake a very pleasant duty of opening this building, which has been constructed by

Digitized by Google

CENTRAL Y.M.C.A., ALEXANDRIA.

To face page 46]

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

the Y.M.C.A. for the benefit and use of our soldiers and sailors in Alexandria. To most of us it seems only yesterday that we were talking with the indefatigable and energetic secretary, Mr. Jessop, and we agreed that one of the most pressing needs of the moment in the interest of our brave soldiers and sailors here in Alexandria was some building conveniently situated in a favourable locality, which would serve as a place of meeting, refreshment, and recreation under conditions of comfort, quiet, and respectability, which are, of course, sometimes lacking in the public places in large cities like Alexandria.

There were only two huge difficulties that faced us. One was, where could we find a site for the building? and the other where could we find the money to erect the building? These two difficulties might have seemed formidable to some people, but not so to Mr. Jessop and those who assist him. In a few days they had found both the money and the site (loud applause), thanks to the assistance of the Alexandria Municipality, whom I wish to take this opportunity of thanking. I think you will agree with me that it is a very central site (hear, hear). As regards the money, it has been got from several sources.

It might interest you to learn that the cost of this building has been met by the joint assistance of the British Y.M.C.A., the British Red Cross Society, the Australian Red Cross Society, and lastly the Y.M.C.A. of America (loud and continued applause). We have also received £150 from the British Soldiers' Café in Cairo, which is being run so successfully there. Having got the money, to build the house was the next thing to get on with. For that, we are greatly indebted to Mr. Robert Williams, who has not only drawn up the plans of this building, but has come down to Alexandria, and given a great deal of his time in supervising the work without receiving any remuneration for his services (loud applause).

Such is the history of the inception and construction of the building. I think I am voicing your sentiments when I say we congratulate the Y.M.C.A. for what they have accomplished on behalf of the welfare of the Army and Navy on whom the future and fortune of our great Empire depend to-day (applause). I speak not only of the work accomplished by the Y.M.C.A. in Egypt—that you can see in the Hospitals and Convalescent Homes of this country—but I speak of the gigantic work carried on in the great camps in England and large military bases on

Digitized by Google

the Continent by energetic workers like Mr. Jessop and his able assistants. We wish the Y.M.C.A. success in all they undertake, and most especially in the work carried on in this building (loud applause).

The Building Described

The new building is eminently successful. It is designed in a pleasing and suitable style; and both inside and out the lines are most satisfactory to the eye. Mr. R. Williams, F.R.I.B.A., the architect, deserves all praise for having done so well with the limited means at his command. Specially noteworthy are the curved principals of the interior, which give the appearance of the roof being arched.

The building is timber-framed on a stone foundation and filling of half brick runs up to a height of three metres. The upper part consists of strong vaulting. The roof is vulcanite sheeting on boards. The floors are asphalted. The colour scheme, which is tasteful and decorative, consists of the native red bricks left their natural colour, the woodwork stained sea-green, the matting left its ordinary colour, and the roof white-washed. The interior is painted a soft olive-green.

The accommodation has been carefully thought out, and the rooms are large and airy. The large hall is 25 metres long by 9 metres broad, the reading rooms 15 by 6 metres, and the billiard rooms 8 by 9 metres. There is also a commodious kitchen, a store, a bedroom, and office. In the lavatory there are two douche baths. Outside there is a roomy verandah of an area of 170 square metres.

The builders who obtained the contract were Messrs. E. and A. de Farro, and the total cost has been just under £1,000.

Digitized by Google

This club has been steadily successful; it provides meals, reading rooms, literature, writing materials, for all soldiers and sailors who visit it. It further arranges lectures, entertainments, classes in languages, and religious services. The work has grown steadily, and the Club has achieved a distinct success of its own; it is to be hoped that when the war is concluded it will remain as a club for soldiers, sailors, and men of the mercantile marine who find themselves in Alexandria without friends or entertainment.

ESBEKIEH.—The problem in Cairo was different. Cairo is a very large city, and extends over a very large area. The ground is exceedingly expensive, because of the limitation of the site, and modern Cairo has spread without any thorough town planning programme; in other words, open spaces are few and far between. After consultation with Sir Henry MacMahon, however, we determined to try to find a central place to found a suitable Social Club, and Mr. Jessop spent many days inspecting many and various places that were offered. He found few places available, and such cafés and places as could be obtained were offered to us at exorbitant prices. In the centre of Cairo is one of the few open spaces called the "Esbekieh Gardens" and at one corner of the gardens was a small soldiers' club, managed by a few Anglo-Egyptian ladies, and run on a quiet scale. It was very successful and met a great want. Close to it, in the centre of the gardens was an open-air theatre, called the "Skating Theatre," with an asphalt skating rink or auditorium, and in its vicinity was a restaurant run by Greeks. Mr. Jessop entered into negotiations for the taking over of this property, about an acre in extent, as a soldiers' club, realizing that with the

Digitized by Google

restaurant and the quiet soldiers' club already in existence, the whole might form a very suitable Recreation centre. The difficulties in the way were very great. It appears that contracts and sub-contracts had been let, and at one point we almost despaired of making any arrangement, but at the height of the difficulty Sir Henry MacMahon stepped in, and with the aid of Sir Murdoch MacDonald, adviser to the Public Works Ministry, secured the building and enabled us to make reasonable terms with the contractors. The Club was then founded after consultation with General Sir John Maxwell, the Commander-in-Chief, and Sir Henry MacMahon, and the movement was initiated by the following Committee:

Patroness, Her Excellency Lady MacMahon; President, Lady Maxwell. Committee Members: Mr. Monteith-Smith; Mr. Grainger-Stewart; Mr. A. Lucas; Mr. W. Jessop; Mrs. Ford; Mrs. Spens; Mrs. Elgood; Mrs. Jessop; Mrs. Chisholm; Mrs. Knox, and Mrs. Summons.

Committee Members: Colonel Ryan; Colonel Manifold; Colonel Martin; Lieut.-Colonel Springthorpe; Lieut.-Colonel Barrett.

Of these the following formed the Executive Committee: Mr. Monteith-Smith; Mr. Grainger-Stewart; Mr. A. Lucas, and Mr. W. Jessop.

The following extract from the *Egyptian Gazette* of August 17, 1915, indicates the policy adopted:

"Lieut.-Colonel Barrett is the prime mover in what is going to be a rather new kind of venture for the Red Cross. The Colonel has been anxious that there should be some place in the city where soldiers could go for either recreation or rest, and where they would feel as

Digitized by Google

SOLDIERS' CLUB, ESBEKIEH.

To face page 50]

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

much at home as possible. At present, there is little being done for the men when they are actually in the city. The Y.M.C.A. has been doing good work among the men in the camps in the outlying districts, but when the men have come into town they have had to wander about for the most part with little of real interest, except the experience of getting lost; and this in time becomes a very wearisome and monotonous pastime. They have had cause to wish for some central place to which they might go and read, write, or play, as they desired.

"The great success of the Soldiers' Café opened by General Maxwell last December has encouraged further effort on a still more ambitious scale, and though it has not been easy to secure a suitable locality for such a club, with the assistance of the Tanzim, the Skating Rink in the Esbekieh Gardens has been secured. This should prove an ideal spot. It is at present being used for public entertainments; there is a theatre in the enclosure, as well as a stand for light refreshments. The rink itself offers excellent opportunities for sport. When an area at the side of the rink is covered and fitted out with tables for writing, the whole should be easily adapted to the purposes of a club capable of satisfying the various inclinations of those who will use it.

"At first, the Australian Red Cross Committee had the matter under consideration, but they decided to appoint a Committee which should include not only members of the Red Cross Society, but also of the Y.M.C.A., and to have this Committee look into the whole matter from all points of view. This Committee met twice at the home of the President, Lady Maxwell. The net result is that the enterprise is going ahead, and the Club is being opened to-day at 6.30 p.m.

Digitized by Google

"General Maxwell has been kind enough to promise to take part in the formal opening. A representative of the Australian Red Cross Society and one from the Y.M.C.A. will be present, and give some account of the origin and nature of what is to be attempted. There will be a military band in attendance, and after the official opening the work of the Club will begin at once. It is hoped that there will be a good entertainment on this first night.

"The Club is under the joint control of the Australian Red Cross Society and the Y.M.C.A. This is not the only undertaking in which these two bodies are working hand in hand, but it is perhaps the most interesting and striking example. The Red Cross are financing the scheme, and the Y.M.C.A., with its previous successful experience in managing schemes similar to this, accepting the responsibility for the details of administration. Already a Y.M.C.A. worker, Mr. W. M. Whitelaw, has been set apart for this work, but all the workers in the camps will give their assistance. These men are in close touch with the soldiers in the camps, and know their abilities and inclinations at first hand."

The club was opened on August 17, 1915, by General Sir John Maxwell. The report of his speech and those which follow are from the *Egyptian Mail*, August 18, 1915.

At the opening of the Club for soldiers yesterday evening in the Esbekieh Gardens, General Sir John Maxwell, who performed the ceremony, said: "I have been asked here this evening to open this Soldiers' Recreation Club, and can assure you that I accepted the invitation with very great pleasure. I do not know if it is necessary to tell you, but I have been connected with Egypt for thirty-three years, and what I do not know about Cairo is not worth knowing. Therefore knowing Cairo as I do, it gives me very great pleasure to assist at an

Digitized by Google

SOLDIERS' CLUB, ESBEKIEH.

To face page 52]

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

opening of this sort. Institutions of a similar nature which existed in Cairo prior to the war were not nearly large enough to cope with the huge influx of men as soon as the war was in full swing.

"I do not intend to preach a sermon, but it is notorious to everybody that the temptations which present themselves to soldiers in Cairo are none too healthy. Therefore, the acquisition of a place where men can come and enjoy themselves with restraint, where good meals at a cheap rate are provided, along with healthy recreation, is an excellent thing from the soldiers' point of view. This enterprise has been inaugurated by the Australian Red Cross and the Y.M.C.A. Its success depends upon the men themselves. I am sure they will welcome this Club. It is not proposed to put any more restraint upon the men than can be avoided, and they will be responsible for the good conduct and general control of the place. The men must see that there is no abuse of these privileges.

"The forces now in Cairo consist very largely of Australians, and it is up to us to provide them with healthy amusement (applause). I hope that this Recreation Club will prove a valuable step in that direction. It is not for me to say how proud we are of our forces who have so bravely distinguished themselves at the Dardanelles, and wherever it has been the lot of Briton to meet the enemy (cheers). We are up against a very tough proposition at Gallipoli and in the eastern theatre of Europe, but the harder the proposition, the more readily do our men respond, and I am perfectly confident that the men now training here will not only distinguish themselves when they get to the front, but will reflect credit on the country which produced them. I conclude by wishing great success and prosperity to this Club, and I trust you will enjoy it to the full and make every use of it. I have great pleasure in declaring the Club open" (loud applause).

General Legg said that on behalf of the Australian and New Zealand troops he thanked the Red Cross Society and the Y.M.C.A. for having provided such an excellent institution (cheers). The Committee, he understood, would welcome suggestions which would tend to improve the Club, and so he offered a suggestion, particularly on behalf of the men who had returned from the Front. He would like to see baths installed. He did not mean to say they needed a bath (laughter). But when on

Digitized by Google

the boat recently from the Front, he took three baths in a day, on account of the pleasure they gave him (laughter). He concluded with a hearty vote of thanks to General Maxwell."

General Spens, in moving a vote of thanks to General and Lady Maxwell, said such a Club would provide an objective for soldiers who arrived in Cairo from the Camps to recreate themselves. As he sat on the terrace at Shepheard's Hotel on a Saturday afternoon, he was always struck by the fact that the men seemed to have no fixed purpose, they wandered aimlessly from Shepheard's to the Continental and from the Continental back again. In fact, the only ray of sunshine that he got from their wanderings was when they took donkey rides (laughter). He referred to the splendid work of the Red Cross and the Y.M.C.A., and said they had a very able supporter in Lady Maxwell, who was always at hospitals cheering up wounded men and providing them with cigarettes.

Mr. White, representing the Y.M.C.A., made a frank and straight speech to the men. "The Australian Red Cross Society had always shown a fair-sided policy in the way in which they have sought to serve the soldiers. They believe in the policy that prevention is better than cure, and that it is far better to keep men fit than to have to remedy the consequences of evils wrought when men are not in service. That is why they have co-operated with the Y.M.C.A. in its efforts to make a respectable place for the soldiers.

"One rejoices that the Y.M.C.A. has been called upon to assist in this time of great need. In every country at war to-day it is recognized as best fitted to carry on the moral, physical, and social work amongst the troops. It may interest you to-night, ladies and gentlemen, to know that in England there are nine hundred centres in which the Association is rendering invaluable aid to the Government in providing for the troops clean amusements in huts and marquees. In France to-night there are seventy large centres among every camp of the Allies where this war is being carried on. In India there are large centres where the Y.M.C.A. is working for the benefit of the Territorials, and here in Egypt, in more than twenty-five camps, hospitals, and convalescent homes, they are striving to serve the men in every possible way. It may interest you to know that their work has been carried out throughout the world to such an extent that even among the prison camps in Germany, where there are French and English

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

ENTRANCE TO SOLDIERS' CLUB, ESBEKIEH.

[To face page 55

Digitized by Google

prisoners, the Association has its representatives. So you see we are actually in the camp of the enemy.

"Here in the Esbekieh Gardens it is proposed to carry on this beneficent work for the soldiers. There will be games, entertainments, cinema shows, hockey matches on skates, skating parties, and all other forms of good, wholesome entertainment that can be procured. There will be writing matter, tables with the latest English and Australian papers and magazines, and a good library will be at the service of the soldiers; they will have every facility for letter writing, and for all of this there will be no charge.

"In the rear of the Club there will be a refreshment bar where the best of light refreshments will be served at the lowest rates. It has also been arranged that soldiers may get a splendid meal for pt. 8. This will be served from 6 a.m. to 8 p.m. To make this plan a success it is hoped that every soldier will co-operate, and will not be afraid to volunteer his help on every possible occasion. This place is for you to use, and we want you to make the very best use of it."

The programme for this week will be as follows:

Wednesday.—Writing, reading, and games, and skating afternoon and evening, 6 to 8 p.m. The orchestra will play for the skating. At 6 p.m. Cinema entertainment.

Thursday.—A concert will be given at 8 p.m., piano solos, singing, recitations, and comic dances. The orchestra will assist from 6 to 9.30 p.m.

Friday.—The Egyptian band will play in the Garden outside the Club from 6 to 8 p.m. The club will be open all the afternoon and evening for writing, games, and sport. The orchestra will play from 8 to 9.30 p.m.

Saturday.—Open morning, afternoon, and evening. Orchestra 2.30 to 4.30 p.m. and 6 to 9.30 p.m. From 8 to 9.30 p.m. a Cinema entertainment.

Sunday.—Open all day. Orchestra 2.30 to 4.30 p.m. with informal sing-song. In the Garden the band will play from 6 to 8 p.m., and at 8 p.m. there will be sing-song service in the Club.

All Men in Uniform are Cordially Invited

Special facilities for luncheons and dinners from 8 a.m. to 8 p.m. for men in uniform at Santi's Restaurant. Light

Digitized by Google

refreshments will be served in the Recreation Club at reduced prices.

The Australian Red Cross agreed to find the necessary money in the event of loss, at all events for a term of three months, and the Y.M.C.A. undertook the management. The Club was successful almost from the first, but has been profoundly modified as time has gone by. The management has laid itself out to provide the weekly programme of entertainments, which was furnished beforehand to the various camps, and a sample of which follows.

Y.M.C.A.

PROGRAMME OF WEEK'S EVENTS AT THE SOLDIERS' RECREATION CLUB, ESBEKIEH GARDENS, CAIRO

Billiards, 1 pt. per half hour.

Hot baths, 2 pt.; Shower baths, 1 pt. (this includes towel and soap).

Admission to the Club is entirely free

All Soldiers and Nurses in uniform are welcome

SEPTEMBER 15 TO 21, 1918

Sunday.—Swimming all day till 7 p.m. At 4.15 p.m., Visitors' Tea, in Mat Hut. Tickets may be obtained at the Office free after 3.30 p.m.; Speaker, J. Stephens Jones, Esq., B.A. At 7 p.m., Picture Programme. At 8 p.m., a Lecture by Dr. E. A. Wisher.

Monday.—Roller skating all day. Swimming all day from 6 a.m. to 9 p.m. At 6.15 p.m., Beginners' French Class. At 7 p.m., Picture Programme. (1) "Getting Father's Goat," (2) "Her Husband's Friend," (3) "Picturesque Sights." Also some turns by Willie the famous Dark-town entertainer.

Tuesday.—Roller Skating all day. Swimming all day from 6 a.m. to 7 p.m. At 7 p.m., Pictures. At 7.30 p.m., a Lecture by Dr. Wisher entitled "American Ideals. An Interpretation

Digitized by Google

for a British Audience." At 7.15 p.m., Colloquial Arabic Class. At 8.15 p.m., Classical Arabic Class.

Wednesday.—Roller Skating all day. Swimming from 6 a.m. to 7 p.m. At 6.15 p.m., Advanced French Class. At 7 p.m., A Grand Orchestral Concert by the famous "Welch Orchestra."

Thursday.—Roller Skating all day. Swimming all day from 6 a.m. to 7 p.m. At 7 p.m. Picture Programme. At 7.30 p.m., a Lecture by Dr. Wisher entitled "Social Reconstruction after the War."

Friday.—Roller Skating all day. Swimming all day from 6 a.m. to 9 p.m. At 6.15 p.m., Beginners' French Class. At 7 p.m. Picture Programme: (1) "A Runaway Elephant," (2) "Getting Father's Goat," (3) "Picturesque Sights."

Saturday.—Roller Skating all day. Swimming all day from 6 a.m. to 7 p.m. At 7 p.m., a Grand Concert will be given by Countess de Lavison and Sergt. George Jeffery.

Enter now for the Aquatic Sports to be held on Saturday 28th. See special notice.

As will be seen from this programme, the entertainments include cinema, concerts, plays, billiard tables, skittles, and all sedentary games, illustrated lectures on very many topics, and religious services. Furthermore, stationery is provided in vast quantities, and originally bore the stamp of the Y.M.C.A. and Australian Red Cross combined. In addition there is a lending library, a place for the sale of the odds and ends a soldier requires, and roller skates are provided for the various games which take place on the rink. In addition hot and cold water baths were provided, and a magnificent swimming bath, 90 feet long by 35 feet broad and 9 feet deep, was erected at a cost of £2,000, and opened by the General Officer Commanding in Egypt, on Thursday, August 15, 1918.

Digitized by Google

The following brief account of the opening of the swimming bath by General Watson, G.O.C., Egypt, will furnish an indication of the attitude of the military authorities with regard to this splendid club:

The swimming bath which has been erected by the Young Men's Christian Association was opened yesterday afternoon under ideal conditions.

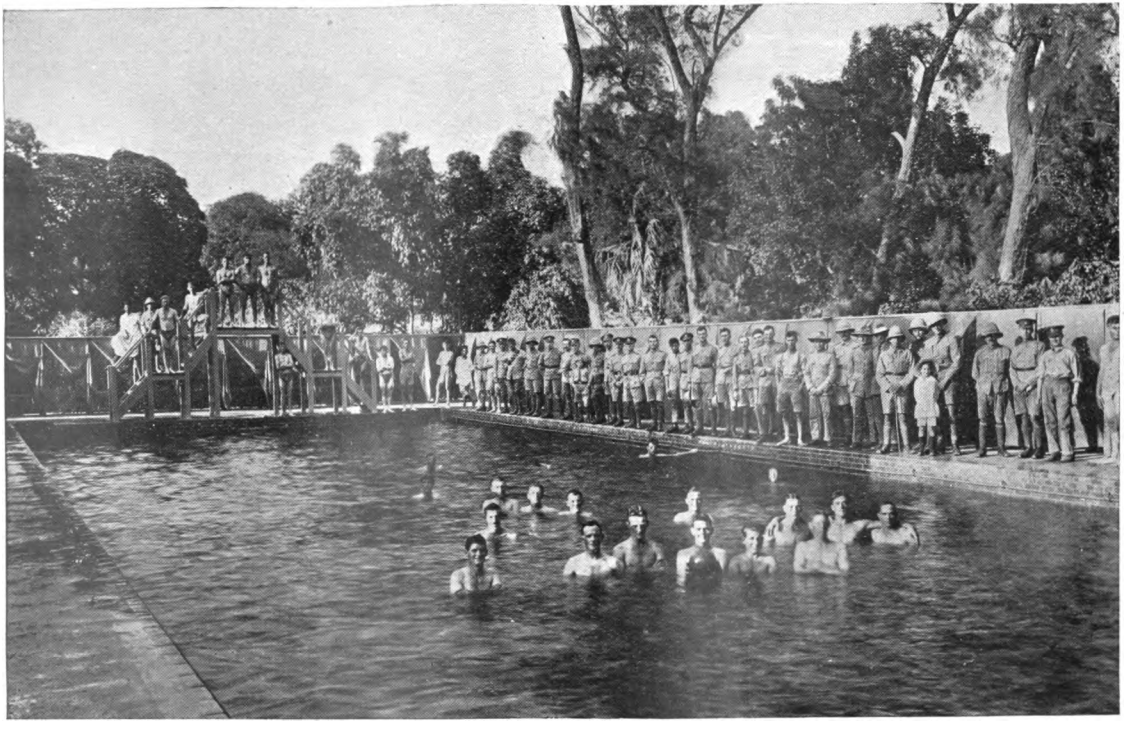
General Watson prefaced his formal opening of the bath with a few remarks. He said that he had received a message from the High Commissioner, who was in Alexandria, expressing his satisfaction at the completion of the bath, and his confidence that it would be much appreciated by those for whom it was intended. General Watson then, in a brief review of the Y.M.C.A.'s work in the Esbekieh Gardens, said that Colonel Sir James Barrett, of Australia, had first conceived the idea of a Y.M.C.A. in the Gardens and had provided the funds[1] for its inauguration. Sir Henry MacMahon, then High Commissioner, and Sir Murdoch Macdonald had taken the greatest interest in the scheme, and it was owing to their efforts that the open-air theatre had been instituted. There was also a cinema, a buffet where all kinds of light refreshments could be obtained, writing and reading rooms, and a skating rink. Now in addition they had this fine swimming bath, which had been completed at a cost of £E.2,000, and in seven weeks instead of the nine originally promised. The whole of the water would be changed twice weekly, and every day a portion would be changed.

There was also another aspect of the Soldiers' Recreation Club to which he wished to refer. The Esbekieh Gardens were on the edge of the danger zone over the way—which had been the cause of trouble to the men in khaki. This club was like a board on the edge of that danger zone saying "Don't go over the boundary." There was no doubt that in this respect this recreation club had proved of great use. And the swimming bath, which offered the best and healthiest form of exercise, should prove an extra attraction.

After declaring the swimming bath open, General Watson called for three cheers for the Y.M.C.A., which were accorded vociferously. Three cheers were then

[1] Australian Red Cross Funds.

Digitized by Google



SWIMMING BATH, ESBEKIEH

To face page 58]

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

given for the G.O.C., and the military band which was present brought this part of the programme to an end with "God Save the King."

The provision of all these activities entailed a vast amount of labour, and, by permission of the Ministry of Public Works, the boundaries of the club were greatly extended into the Gardens.

The arrangements for the supply of refreshments underwent considerable change as time passed. Towards the end of 1915, a number of ladies made their appearance in Egypt, and were desirous of contributing to the military work. They took over the canteen in the Esbekieh Club itself, where light refreshments, tea, chocolate, coffee, cakes, had been provided, and their energy and the tasteful way in which they present the food has ended in the development of an enormous canteen business, and the consequent necessity for a very large honorary staff. It may be said that the phenomenal success of the Esbekieh Soldiers' Club is largely due to the devotion of these ladies, who, day by day, in season and out of season, devote themselves to what is the hardest kind of work.

The fame of the Esbekieh Club is spreading far and wide, and many extracts from correspondents in distant regions indicate how successful it has been.

The following report is the best evidence of the nature of the work done up to July 1917 :

Location and Equipment of Esbekieh Gardens

The Y.M.C.A. Centre at Esbekieh is in the inner circle of a centrally located public garden, beautifully wooded and laid out with walks, lawns, and flowers. The section devoted to Y.M.C.A. work covers three acres, and is separated from the general gardens by a "matted" partition or fence, with three gates. In this section devoted to the use of the Association is a

Digitized by Google

fully equipped theatre, with all the appurtenances of same, such as scenery, lights, dressing rooms, etc. In front of the theatre is an open-air auditorium, capable of accommodating 3,000 men, and when not in use for such purpose it is used as a "skating rink." Immediately surrounding this auditorium is a sanded promenade around which are gathered the various departments, such as office, canteen, refreshment, and serving tables, stores, kitchen, game and reading rooms, telephone, and baths. The situation is magnificent and the equipment ideal. The organization is surely fortunate in securing this entire outfit for the men.

Summary of Events at Esbekieh

During a period of twelve months from May 19, 1916, to May 19, 1917, there have been held in Esbekieh Gardens, in addition to general (detail) work and not a few regular routine attractions, at least one special event every evening, and on some evenings two events. Aside from general skating, use of billiards, providing of literature for the tables, care of baths, attending to sales department, and general contact with men, not to speak of canteen work, etc., there have been in this period of twelve months events of a public nature as follows:

Six Hundred and Fifty-nine Events

Band Concerts	22
Boxing Entertainments	24
Orchestral Concerts	4
French Classes	57
General Concerts	78
Out-of-door Games on Rink	6
Moving Pictures	93
Dramatic Plays	39
Special Novelty Entertainments	15
Chess and Draughts Games on Fifty-two Evenings	431
Skating Carnival or Matches	48
Illustrated Lectures	36
Lectures without Illustrations	17
Bible Class Sessions	12
Sunday Afternoon Addresses	52
Sunday Teas	52
Sunday Evening Addresses	52

Digitized by Google

Most Marked Events

Occasionally there have been some especially big events even for "Esbekieh Gardens," as, for instance, Boxing Championships, three evenings; Lena Ashwell Y.M.C.A. Concert Party, two events; Ada Reeve Concert Company; Boxing Day Celebration; Kitchener Memorial Service and the Grand Fête Day of May 12—these events alone had an attendance of not less than 27,000. Apart from these, however, the daily average at the Gardens has been about 1,600.

Multitudinous Activities

During this same period of twelve months about 5,000 baths have been taken, and over 6,000 games of billiards played by 12,000 men. Other games have been participated in by an additional 11,000 men. A circulating library has offered a limited opportunity for the reading of books, from which over 300 volumes have been taken and read. The various tables have been supplied with newspapers, periodicals, and magazines, and have been well patronized. The rink with skating has offered an opportunity for considerable amusement and exercise; some 4,000 have engaged in this pastime.

Religious Needs

Religious facilities offered to and enjoyed by the soldiers are worthy of mention. Of these we mention Sunday services, both afternoon and evening, where we come face to face with the men in religious thought. The Sunday afternoon teas, with the visiting soldiers as our guests, have enabled the organization not only to present comforts to men, but also to present a "clear-cut" Gospel truth that we feel has made an impression for good. The same, surely, can be said of the Sunday evening services.

Letters for Home

Over half a million sheets of writing paper, besides envelopes, have been used in correspondence by the soldiers. This we think is rather remarkable, because the many activities which crowd in on the attention of the men are not necessarily conducive to letter writing while in the Gardens.

A successful chess tournament, carried through to the end,

Digitized by Google

engaged the attention of over a hundred chess players. A draughts tournament created an interest among many players who continued to show their interest until the approach of the summer heat. Rink hockey tournaments on skates, with seven teams, had a membership of some 75, and the playing attracted hundreds nightly. Friendly boxing displays or exhibitions brought together not only the participants, but also hundreds of onlookers who have enjoyed a friendly test of strength and skill.

The Canteen Work

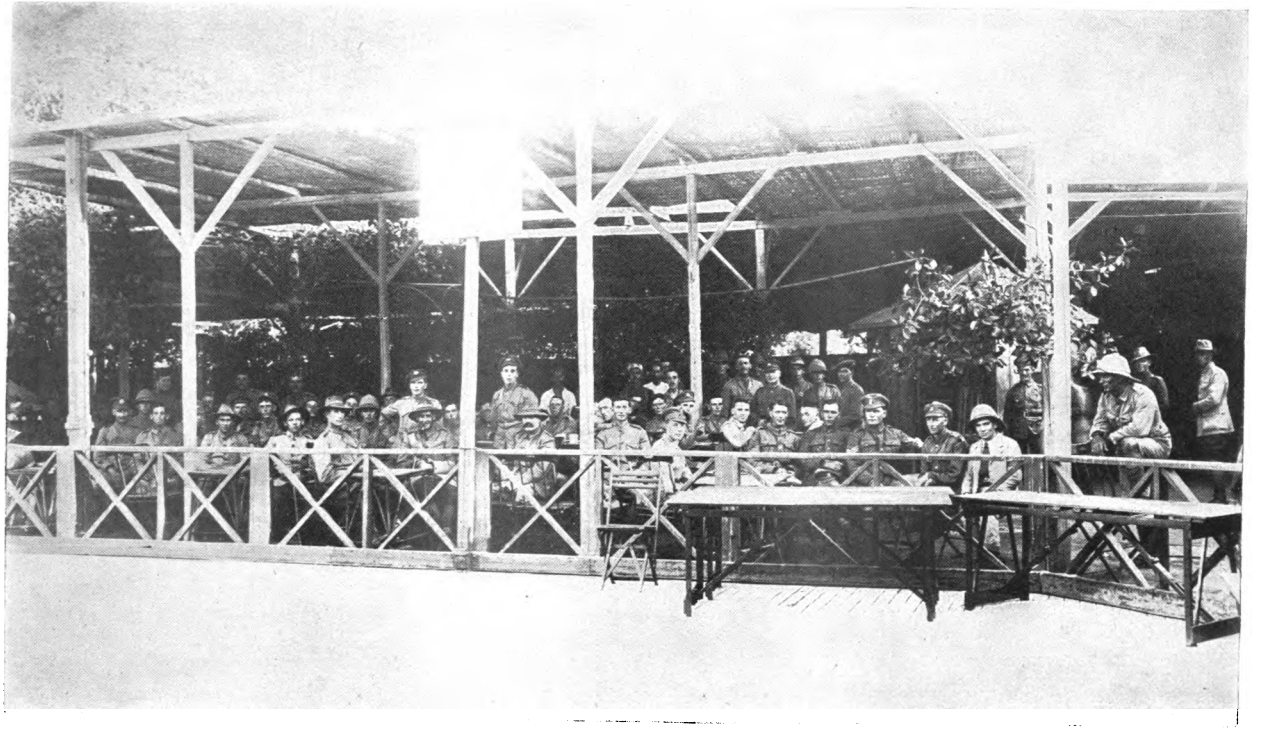
On Boxing Day, December 26, "Open House" was held in the evening in the Gardens, when the soldiers were invited to be our "guests" for "refreshments." On that evening 3,000 cups of tea, coffee, or cocoa, 3,050 sandwiches, and 6,570 cakes and small mince pies were given in this "heart cheering." Special decorations, with unique programme consisting of character sketches, music, and sports together with prizes made the evening one long to be remembered.

A Grand Fête Day was held on Saturday, May 12, when the entire gardens were decorated and illuminated, and many kinds of games introduced. The High Commissioner, Sir Reginald Wingate, and the Commander-in-Chief, General Sir Archibald Murray, and Staff, graced the occasion. Convalescents were our special guests in the afternoon, when fully 3,000 were furnished with refreshments, consisting of tea, bread-and-butter, cake, etc. A total of 7,000 were present during the day.

Weekly, through the kindness of Mrs. Dunn, a party of soldiers from one of the Convalescent Homes is entertained with tea and cake in our canteen as our guests.

A vital part of our work is our Refreshment Canteen, open practically all day for the sale of light refreshments, such as coffee, tea, or cocoa, besides sandwiches of a substantial character, cakes of many varieties, and an abundance of stewed fruit in dishes, aerated waters, tobacco, cigarettes, etc. It is not too much to say of this canteen or refreshment work, that soldiers coming to the gardens pass many restaurants on the way, preferring to enjoy the refreshments served by the ladies in charge of this particular work. No little part of the good accomplished in this department is through the gracious refinement and homelike surroundings introduced by the ladies, which the men

Digitized by Google



SKATING RINK, SOLDIERS' CLUB, ESBEKIEH.

To face page 62]

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

are not slow to appreciate. Whatever the custom of the men among themselves, it is true that in our environment rarely is a swear-word heard. An average of over a thousand cups of tea, coffee, or cocoa and 4,000 portions of cake and sandwiches are served here daily.

A little store, which is also used for office work, is to be found near the entrance to the gardens, where there are on sale soldiers' "nick-nacks" from bachelors' buttons to shaving soap and from picture postal cards to shoe blacking.

Personal Service

There have been many side-lines of effort, calling for the attention of the workers at Esbekieh; for instance the provision for soldiers of free legal advice, and the conducting of correspondence in search for missing soldiers. Who can determine the tragedy of anxiety and pathos contained in a letter from a mother who writes concerning her boy soldier? She hasn't heard from him for months. A wife writes regarding her husband; or a friend in reference to one missing. Such letters receive careful consideration, and sooner or later we are generally able to give the desired information. The providing of tombstones, through the British Red Cross Society, for graves for soldiers, and the sending home of photographs of same; the securing of money from relatives or friends at home, thousands of miles distant, for soldiers needing and asking for same,—all are simply a part of the work here conducted.

Copies of the Bible

The distribution of thousands of copies of the New Testament suitably and attractively bound, besides single books of the Bible have proven very acceptable to the men. Where opportunity offered, friendly advice for the soldiers' welfare has been given. In not a few instances efforts have been put forth, and successfully, to put some misled soldier in right moral relations, necessitating personal visitation and special painstaking effort.

Printed matter by the thousands of copies have been furnished and distributed to the soldiers at centres outside of our own immediate environment, such, for instance, as the printed weekly programme, which is eagerly desired by the men. The official map of the city, with places of popular visitation marked

Digitized by Google

thereon, together with other printed information. These items alone reach in number issued to considerably over a quarter of a million.

Loyalty in Spirit to Head-quarters

We have kept in touch with Military Head-quarters, and have observed not only the letter of the laws and rules adopted, but their spirit. We have been careful to post all notices and new rulings from Head-quarters for the information and instruction of the soldiers. Our centre has been used as a depot for the reception and distribution of mails, both letters and papers, necessitating at times laborious and careful effort in the changing of addresses on "mail" by reason of the soldiers having moved to other sections of Egypt, or possibly to France or England, or perhaps home, wherever that may be in relation to the individual soldier. "Reuter's" world's telegrams as passed by the censor are posted immediately upon their receipt for the information of the soldiers. These are much appreciated, as attested by the crowds that gather about them constantly. Maps of the scenes of the various war fronts have been posted. These have created much interest as the men have gathered around them to note the war's progress from day to day.

"Thinking" of the Men from the Desert

We have been a centre or head-quarters for general information, especially to new-comers to Cairo, and the men who have come up from the desert for three, five, or more days' vacation have found in Esbekieh Gardens not only a resting place attractive in form, but a counter-attraction to many evils that are usually to be found in cities of the East, and which, to say the least, are not missing in Cairo.

Esbekieh a Centre from which other Influences radiate

A very practical line of work radiating from Esbekieh Gardens organization is the care of the games interest in the various convalescent homes, four in number, in the vicinity of Cairo. At these different homes programmes of games are arranged which include football, cricket, volley ball, Badminton, hockey, punch ball, gusto, quoits, etc. These games are very much enjoyed by the men in the various centres, and are found to be greatly conducive to the improvement of health. Occasionally

Digitized by Google

one of the Esbekieh Garden Staff is called upon to officiate in games played between men who temporarily occupy the different garrisons.

An occasional visit to the hospitals is not without its quota of encouragement to men sick and away from home.

Many Workers

In reviewing such a work as the above indicates, the question may well be asked: Who is responsible for it? It is true there are leading spirits, and yet as we think of the workers identified with this centre of activities, we are compelled to remember that not alone upon one rests the responsibility, but that many have contributed their meed of effort. Scores of volunteer workers (besides fifteen native helpers) have all worked together with the sole purpose of doing what they could to help forward the work, and to contribute their share of endeavour for the Empire and for God. And what shall we say of that multitude of workers who have appeared on the many entertainment programmes and others associated in the delivery of lectures, etc., a thousand of them? On some future occasion the management of the Y.M.C.A. will pay fitting tribute to the men and women who have so nobly endeavoured to do what they could in their several lines of activities.

The Canteen work in the Esbekieh was conducted at first under the direction of Mrs. Dunn, subsequently under the direction of Mrs. Beard, and in both cases with the constant help of Miss Greenhorn. They have been assisted by the ladies whose names appear in Appendix II.

Anzac Hostel.—Towards the end of 1915, however, as the concentration camp at Tel-el-Kebir grew and as the work on the Canal increased, the problem of accommodating men on leave rose into prominence, and Brigadier-General Sir Robert Anderson, who had just arrived from Australia, obtained, by lease, the building formerly occupied by the Cairo Bourse. This is a very

Digitized by Google

commodious building with a fine central hall, which he turned into a soldiers' hostel. On behalf of the military authorities, the hostel was arranged and managed from its inception by two Y.M.C.A. secretaries, Messrs. Shapley and Jones.

The social management was undertaken by Sister Samuel. The hostel was organized primarily for Australian troops, and was very successful, though the charges were high. Then the inevitable happened. When the Australian troops (except the Light Horse) moved to France, the military authorities found themselves with this club on their hands, and, after a considerable amount of negotiation, they requested the Y.M.C.A. to take it over and administer it. After a good deal of discussion as to ways and means and terms, this was done, and it has been used as a social and residential hotel for soldiers ever since; but the prices had to be cut down severely, in order to meet the wants of the British soldier, whose pay is less than one-fourth that of the Australian soldier. Yet, notwithstanding the rise in food prices, the soldier is provided with a bed and three meals a day for pt. 22 (4*s.* 6*d.*), and has in addition all the social advantages of a club. As time went by, however, even this accommodation was found to be inadequate, and an adjoining building, Balmoral Hotel, was taken, in order to provide extra sleeping accommodation. This is now named the Y.M.C.A. Corner House.

In course of time other clubs—some of them excellent—run by individuals, and not by an organization, have appeared in Cairo and in Alexandria. There seems to be room for them, but they all labour under the disadvantage of not being co-related, that is to say, their efficiency depends on the personality of

Digitized by Google

ANZAC HOSTEL.

To face page 66]

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

the manager, and if the manager drops out, there is no organization to provide someone else who can carry on the work.

The pressure on the Anzac Hostel and Corner House has been very great indeed, especially since the tariff was lowered. In addition to these advantages a Bureau of Inquiry was opened in the Cairo Railway Station, and soldiers on arrival are furnished with a small guide to Cairo, with information about the hotels, hospitals, etc., and also receive any necessary personal service.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER VII

AT THE DARDANELLES

THE troops left Egypt for the Dardanelles in March 1915. The landing was effected on April 25, and the sick and wounded began to reach Cairo on the 28th. The principle feature of the interval between the landing and August (approximately) was the extreme difficulty, in fact the practical impossibility, of obtaining transport. During this period I was sending Red Cross goods to the Dardanelles through the agency of Sir Armand Ruffer, the British Red Cross Commissioner, who did his very best to get the goods forwarded, utilizing his knowledge of local shipping. It was exceedingly difficult to secure transport; it was necessary to send an orderly with the goods, and even then they sometimes disappeared. Some time about July and August, the transport arrangements became better, and the Y.M.C.A. then made a great effort to try to provide the men who were fighting on the Peninsula, and the men on the islands, with the necessary comforts. The story is better told in the words of those who did the work, and the following report was furnished by Mr. Jessop of his visit to the Dardanelles in August 1915:

I left Alexandria on August 7, and arrived at Mudros two days later. It was three days before I could get permission to move forward, but on Thursday the 12th I got all my goods transferred to a trawler, and after about six hours' sailing arrived

Digitized by Google

at Kephalos. I was fortunate in finding the Camp Commandant, Colonel Hawker, at the landing pier, and he made me very welcome, ordered my goods to be taken to the camp, and introduced me to the officers' mess. I saw him again the next morning, and on his advice paid a visit to the capital of the island, Panaghia, to see about procuring supplies, etc. This was rather a tough journey of two hours on horseback. I found the prices abnormally high and very limited in both quantity and variety, and altogether beyond our reach for canteen purposes. That evening Colonel Hawker agreed to provide me at once with a small marquee, and to give me a site in a very central part of the camp. We together worded a telegram which we sent off to Cairo with instructions for Owens, one of the Australian secretaries, to get marquee, piano, timber for benches, and supplies as quickly as possible, and leave by the first available boat. We also wired the military authorities to facilitate Owens' movements and render him every assistance possible in getting his supplies forward.

The next morning, Saturday, saw our small marquee erected, and with several tables and benches hastily knocked together by some Australian friends we opened up for business that afternoon. It was almost pathetic to see the eagerness with which the men viewed our preparations, and the way they came about the tent. I had brought with me several cases of tobacco, cigarettes, and chocolates for distribution among the wounded and sick, and as most of the men about belonged to that class I had a busy time distributing these "comforts." All day Sunday I was busy giving out stationery, pocket Testaments, magazines, etc., etc., and in the evening we had a service outside the tent, which was well attended and apparently appreciated.

On Monday I got hold of a Greek baker, who agreed to erect an oven, and run a canteen under our direction. I arranged to see him again on the Wednesday, when a definite arrangement would be entered into, and sent him off to see about supplies. On Tuesday I left early in the morning for Cape Helles, where I arrived about 9 o'clock. With the principal chaplain I called upon the Camp Commandant, and he quite agreed to our establishing a centre within his sphere of influence, provided a space could be found us free from shrapnel fire of the enemy. While we were discussing the possible situation, the fire from Achi Baba began, shells were falling about the beach and in the harbour,

Digitized by Google

and I was compelled to admit that no place, as far as I could see, would be out of range of the Turkish guns. However, I told him that we were quite prepared to go where the men had to go, and would run the risk if we were allowed to establish ourselves at any point where the men would be permitted to visit us. Only a very small hut can be erected of course, but it will let the men see that the Y.M.C.A. is standing with them and doing its best to serve them in these unusual conditions. I visited the trenches where the 10th Manchesters, the 5th East Lancs., the Lancashire Fusiliers, the Scottish Borderers, and several other regiments were. Many of the East Lancashire Division recognized me, and called out asking if I had brought the Y.M.C.A. with me. I left a large supply of stationery, magazines, cigarettes, and tobacco for them, with several of the chaplains, and some of it I distributed myself, and the men were grateful I can assure you. I looked up two batteries of Australian artillery that I had been told about, and took with me several pounds of Havelock tobacco and some pipes. I had many very interesting experiences, dodging shells, spent bullets, and the like, which are incidental to life on the Peninsula, and in the late evening took trawler back to Kephalos.

Next day I saw my Greek friend, and with the approval of the Camp authorities arranged that he should at once proceed to erect a kitchen, build a bakery, and I sent him to buy dishes and cooking utensils. I also secured a member of the military police as orderly for the tent, and he moved his things to it, and proved a very valuable assistant.

The next morning I started on the early morning trawler for Suvla Bay, where the new landing recently took place, and from there went to Anzac at the invitation of General Godley, the G.O.C. of the Australian and New Zealand Division. To describe conditions at this place is beyond my time and pen. Suffice it to say that no part of the beach, and only the dug-outs on the hill-side, are free from snipers' bullets and shell-fire. I had several cases of supplies for this camp, and distributed them among the men and through the chaplains, and instead of twelve cases I brought with me, I could easily have distributed twelve hundred. On Saturday, August 21, and Sunday the 22nd, I witnessed the attack on Hill W and the capture of the Susak wells. It was a sight I shall never forget. The havoc caused by the enemy's shrapnel was terrible, and the lines of wounded that

Digitized by Google

ANZAC.

Red triangle marks Y.M.C.A. Tent.

To face page 70]

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

soon began to come in was a most pitiful spectacle. I got the consent from General Godley and General Carruthers to establish a small centre in one of the gulleys at Anzac just as soon as we can get the material and the man to put in charge.

I returned to Kephalos on Sunday evening, on Wednesday returned to Mudros, where I met Owens with his supplies on his way to Kephalos. He had been held up several days by the authorities, but we were able to arrange matters so that he would go forward that afternoon. On August 26 I sailed for Alexandria, where I arrived on the afternoon of the 30th, and at once came on to Cairo.

The next report is one from Mr. William Owens, M.B.E., who is now the Supervising Field Secretary of the Y.M.C.A. in Palestine, and is also the Australian Supervising Secretary. Mr. Owens was sent out with the first Australian troops as a purely Australian secretary, but on the formation of the Egyptian Committee he worked under that body:

Mr. Jessop visited the Dardanelles early in August 1915, and from there he wired to Egypt for the Y.M.C.A. to go forward to the Island of Imbros, which lies about nine miles off the coast of Gallipoli. The Y.M.C.A. accordingly went forward with full equipment, and after meeting Mr. Jessop at Mudros, arrived at Imbros towards the end of August. Imbros was called the advanced base where soldiers were drafted from the peninsula to rest. There the Y.M.C.A. put up a large marquee and equipped it with as full an equipment as the tents in Egypt, including a piano. In connection with this tent a coffee bar was run, and also a cake and scone bakery.

After the Y.M.C.A. had been at Imbros for two weeks, and things had got going there, they crossed over to Gallipoli to Cape Helles, following up Mr. Jessop, and got all things prepared for a Y.M.C.A. man to take over when he came along, and a few days later went to Anzac. Anzac is quite a different place to Cape Helles. For instance, on landing at Cape Helles there is no sound of bullets, but there are occasional shells, but nothing more, as the firing line is about four or five miles from the beach,

Digitized by Google

and one did not get far past the beach. At Cape Helles things were more or less like they are in other parts of the world, but at Anzac we were under fire even before landing, simply because there was practically no beach at all, merely a ribbon of sand, and on landing we had to go straight up the high hill in front, and on that hill and the following ones were our own trenches, so it meant that we stepped out of the boat into the firing line, and bullets seemed the most prominent thing there.

We landed at Anzac, and I spent my first night at what is called Quin's Post, and slept in the dug-out of a Methodist chaplain. Needless to say I did not sleep much that night, as it was my first experience of hearing the suction sound of shells going through the air, of bombs exploding, and bullets hitting the sandbags. The next day we called on the Commandant, who said that the Y.M.C.A. would be permitted to come, and gave us a site in Reserve Gulley. He said we must understand that there was no place safe from shells and bullets, although there were some places safer than others, and that Reserve Gulley was one of the safest places round the beach. We now had our site, but the problem was material for building. We needed timber and galvanized iron, but it was impossible to get any material on the Peninsula, except sandbags, so we had to explore the small islands round about in the Ægean sea, and at last found the material we wanted, and shipped it across to the peninsula, where four Tasmanian soldiers put up a building under the shelter of a small hill. The building was 30 feet by 20 feet, and was made of sandbags, wood, and iron. Before the iron was put on we had the roof covered with a large tarpaulin. One day part of a 6-in. shell came through and tore open the roof, but without hurting anyone inside, but that was the only time that a missile of any sort entered the building, which shows that the site was a fairly strategic one from the point of view of safety.

The building was finished some time in September, and we then had to make out a programme for our work at Anzac. We saw that one of the biggest needs on the Peninsula was to give the men something to eat beside their ordinary rations, and acting on the advice of the military authorities we decided to set up several coffee bars, one at this building, and others along the beach for the winter which was drawing near. To do this we would need cakes and scones, large urns, fuel and other things, none of which of course could be obtained on the Peninsula.

Digitized by Google

We doubled the capacity of our bakery at Imbros, building two ovens so as to be able to supply a good number of cakes, etc., for Anzac for the winter. The other necessary equipment for running the coffee bars was obtained from Salonika after considerable delay. It should be mentioned that long before we were able to start the coffee-bar business, we had commenced to run over every day from Imbros to Anzac large consignments of cakes, buns, different kinds of fresh fruit and vegetables. The difficulty was in getting enough of these things to supply the large demand for them. There were about 40,000 men located at Anzac, and we could get nothing on the Island of Imbros, except at exorbitant prices—for instance, we had to pay 1*s.* 6*d.* for one-fourth pound of cocoa—so we had a tremendous demand, but no base of supply. The only sure supply we had was the bakery, and even there we could not get sufficient flour and sugar and wood to turn out the cakes, as we could only buy small quantities at a time.

The way we used to send the cakes over was by means of a service of trawlers which the military ran every day from Imbros to Anzac, and through Sir Ian Hamilton we got permission to use these trawlers for our transport. Thus every day when the weather permitted we put baskets of cake and fruit on board, and we were only able to do this through the splendid assistance we got from the captain and crew; of course we "backsheeshed" them with cakes every morning, and this system was employed all the way from Imbros to Anzac. We sold the fruit and vegetables at the prices we bought them, but with regard to the cakes Mr. Jessop had arranged with the Greek baker at Imbros that the Y.M.C.A. should take 10 per cent. of all cash takings and cash sales, which was to be devoted to the expenses of their works at the Dardanelles. That the men appreciated this extra supply will be realized from the fact that they would gather at 9 o'clock in the morning, and before the trawler came in at 1 o'clock there would be 1,000 men lined up waiting for the stuff which would be started to be sold at 2 o'clock. The men lined up in queues four deep, and they used to nearly push our building down in their eagerness; we always had several policemen on duty when the trawler arrived. It was a remarkable thing that not a single man was ever hit while waiting for the stuff to arrive, though there was never any certainty that one would not be hit by a bullet out of the water. One day Lord Kitchener passed by our

Digitized by Google

place and examined the cakes, and wanted to know where the men had got them from.

During the time we were running the vegetables across to Anzac we were gradually getting ready to start the drink side of the business, but we were finding great difficulty in buying cocoa and coffee, and in getting the fuel and the necessary equipment to make it with. And then there was the difficulty of getting it across; we had to get over a piece a day, because the military had so much to send across.

We saw that if we were going to work on the Peninsula, we would have to work from some base like the military did, so we made Imbros an advanced Y.M.C.A. base, and had our bakery going there, with as much stuff as we could get hold of, and then we crossed to Anzac. The main idea was not to provide a recreation place for the men—that was impossible, as we were so near the firing line—but, working from a supply depot, to supply stuff for the men to eat, as well as Y.M.C.A. equipment and material.

Not long after we got the building up at Anzac the A.D.M.S. there, Colonel Howse, who was very keen on the health of his men, promised to help us all he could, and he thought the coffee idea was the best thing for the men. He asked if we provided a place for the men to write letters in. We said we did not think it wise to gather the men together when there was so much stuff flying about, but he said we cannot stop doing good for fear of something happening. He said he would give us a small marquee, if we could find a place near our building to put it up. So we accepted the offer, and had the tent put up near our building, and equipped it with tables and forms, writing and reading materials, and had a large Y.M.C.A. sign outside for aeroplanes to see. We used the wood building as a kind of distributing centre for the goods, and used the tent as a writing and reading tent, and also for games. This tent was never hit, as it was protected by the hill, and the shells used to fall below it.

At first some of the military authorities were opposed to our scheme, and were not in favour of any Y.M.C.A., work being done, but we got permission from a higher authority, and were able to go on with the work. In October, Donald MacDonald, a Scotch secretary of the Y.M.C.A., came up to assist us at Anzac, and stayed right on to the evacuation. He did splendid work and got on well with the men. If we could only have given MacDonald porridge for breakfast, and cheese, he would have stayed there

Digitized by Google

for three years! He was very popular with the men, especially with Scotchmen who were in the Australian forces, and he did fine work in the canteen. "Mac's a fine fellow" was the general opinion.

Also in October, Wilton Rix arrived to take charge of Cape Helles, which had been waiting so long for a man to come along, and he started a canteen and coffee bar, and Imbros was used as a base—not only to supply Anzac—but also Cape Helles with all the things mentioned. Rix used tents for Y.M.C.A. buildings. Although things were fairly peaceful there the first part of his stay, just before he left the shells came rather frequently, and one went right through the tent and burst inside. Luckily no one was injured; had the tent been full, dozens would have been killed, but just at the moment it was empty. As soon as Anzac was evacuated, Rix left Cape Helles and MacDonald took charge there until Helles also was evacuated.

All this time Imbros was used as a real Y.M.C.A. centre, not only as a supply depot, although the numbers of men there had considerably decreased. A large marquee had been put out of use by strong winds, and for about a month we were working a very small marquee as a depot, waiting for a wooden hut to come along, which had not arrived when we left.

During the time we were running vegetables across to Anzac, we were gradually getting ready to start the drink side of the business, but we were finding great difficulty in buying cocoa and coffee, and in getting the necessary equipment to make it with, and also the fuel; and when we had everything collected ready to start this coffee canteen for the winter, on December 15 we got notice to quit. So after we had been preparing for two months to carry out a certain scheme for the winter, we had about four hours' notice to evacuate. They sent for us in the morning, and said "Get out by the ferry this afternoon." We asked if we couldn't stay behind and get some of our stuff. "Get out this afternoon," was the reply, and we knew it was no use saying any more, so we had to leave about £80 worth of goods beside the building, which is now in the hands of the Turks.

I do not know the position of the Y.M.C.A. in France, but I do not know that any Y.M.C.A. canteen and recreation tent fully equipped has ever been put so close to the firing line, with shells whizzing fairly frequently. If it had been possible, of course, we would have been farther from the firing line, but at Anzac this

Digitized by Google

was not possible. Once there, and, in the midst of the work, it did not seem any different from ordinary life. In ordinary life you are always taking risks, and when you get near the firing line you are taking more risks, but you get used to the added risk.

The only complaint the men had to make about our place was that it did not supply enough. It was, of course, impossible for us to supply more, because it was so difficult to get supplies, but I believe in the winter that with the coffee bar we could have supplied all comers with stuff. Another difficulty that hampered us for a long while in connection with the coffee bar was that we could not get enough water. Every man was allowed a gallon of water per day, and as the water was all carried in ships, if the weather was rough they would get less than that. To run this coffee bar, we had to carry everything except water, and that was difficult to get also. We could not go and get hold of a boat and just take things across, but we had to depend on the military, who had their own stores coming across.

Another difficulty was in the matter of landing. At Imbros when we put the stuff on board a trawler came alongside of the wharf, but no boat could come alongside the beach at Anzac; they had to stand off away out in the bay, and lighters or pinnace boats went out to take off the goods, and this transhipping it on the lighters meant exposing the men, and all who were helping, to risk. The hardest part of the business was the transport, although the military and naval people helped us splendidly; they were all interested in the Y.M.C.A. When we went to Imbros, four men were detailed off to help us—one of them was Assistant Professor of English Literature at Birmingham University, another was a leading Australian jockey, another was a senior pianist, and the other was a clerk. They all did splendid work. We could not have run Imbros and Anzac at the same time without them, as we had to leave someone in charge at Imbros. The Professor used to be left, and we generally took the jockey across to Anzac; he was a hard doer, and did most of the transport for us.

To sum up: We could have done more if the material had been available, but unfortunately the shipment from England arrived too late. Whatever good was done we owe first to the initiative of Mr. Jessop, who commenced operations there, and then to MacDonald and Rix, who so well carried on the work

Digitized by Google

that was begun. Still the little we did was worth doing. To a certain extent, as far as our resources would allow, we helped the men and in a practical way demonstrated to them once again the fact that wherever they went the Y.M.C.A. was prepared to follow.

Y.M.C.A., LANCASHIRE LANDING, CAPE HELLES

(REPORT, NOVEMBER—DECEMBER, 1915.
BY REV. WILTON RIX)

Mr. Rix's Report begins:

I arrived at Cape Helles on November 4, with about 130 cases of equipment, including saleable stuff of the value of about £220. Amongst this, however, was neither tent nor furniture. Lieut.-Colonel Watson, the Base Commandant at Lancashire Landing, from the beginning took the greatest interest in the work, and though he much regretted that we had not made provision for ourselves, gave me quarters in a stores tent in a suitable but somewhat exposed position. From the first the men flocked to our premises, and after 5 o'clock to 9 o'clock every evening it was very uncomfortably packed. In those days, meetings, concerts, selling, writing, reading, housing of stores, serving of hot drinks all had to be carried on in this one marquee. A second smaller one was soon allotted to us, which I arranged half for storing and half with a barrier and counter for serving hot cocoa, coffee, buns, and biscuits to some 500 men per evening. Later we were given yet a third marquee, which I lashed T-wise to the first. This greatly relieved the congestion at night, and made room for a small counter, a platform for the piano, as well as space for writing and games, besides the main seating. I also had a dug-out built between the two marquees, which served for protection and for boiling water. Myself and four orderlies have constituted the staff.

On December 10 our quarters were destroyed by an 8-in. high explosive. On that occasion the stroke of the T was blown to pieces, but with very little damage to our more valuable equipment. Two men were in the tent at the time attending to

Digitized by Google

a stretcher case, the latter being re-wounded, but the other two escaping. Coffee and buns were served as usual the same evening, and within thirty-six hours I had procured another tent, and our work was running as usual. Since that date to the time of my departure, we have been daily under shell fire—last Sunday six shells fell within thirty yards of us, and one of my orderlies was wounded in the leg. Naturally the hut has not been used as freely as before, for while men are willing to do their duty under shell fire, they prefer the safety of a funk-hole for smoking a pipe in rest hours. Safety from shell fire is a matter that is now much exercising the beach command, as new emplacements are said to have been prepared on the Asiatic side, and it is obvious that new German ammunition has been received. The Commandant assured me before I left that a new site would be found for the Y.M.C.A. under the protection of the cliff, in a position which I consider the most satisfactory that could be found. Both Colonel Watson and General Davies commanding the 8th Corps look upon the Y.M.C.A. as essential to the comfort of the troops during the winter, and after the kindness they have shown I sincerely hope that Cairo Head-quarters will exert itself to the utmost to grasp the situation and deal efficiently with it.

A word must be said concerning the men who have been reached by the Y.M.C.A. Immediately around the tent a Battalion of the Scots Garrison have been encamped, and they have used the tents at all times of the day in great numbers. In the beach command there are about 2,000 men engaged in the duties of a base, and these, both naval and military, have used the tent daily. About two miles inland lie the rest trenches, and a mile farther beyond the first line. There are about 30,000 men in all at Helles, but those in trenches are too far away for us to be of use to them under present conditions, though a sprinkling from the rest trenches will be found in the tent every evening. It would be a great comfort to those in the rest trenches if hot cocoa were made for them on the spot in the bitter weather that is coming. The scheme is quite feasible, and it would be a piece of work that would earn the gratitude of the men more than any other.

It has not been necessary for us to run a canteen for the sale of goods in bulk. The beach has already one managed by Staff Captain Halliwell, and it has been as well stocked as was

Digitized by Google

possible under the circumstances, and the Mediterranean Force Canteen is about to take over this work. But the sale of hot drinks, buns, biscuits, chocolate, etc., especially in the evening, is work which the Y.M.C.A. can alone do. I have been doing this daily, and want to put on record my indebtedness to Owens, the Imbros Secretary, for the way he has helped me in supplies. The stormy winter weather will come by January 15, and after that the landing of stores will be uncertain. I therefore wrote Cairo five weeks ago, asking for cocoa, coffee, and biscuits to be sent immediately in order to lay in stock in time, but I have heard nothing. Meanwhile I have been getting charcoal, biscuits, and cocoa in as large quantities as possible from Owens, and Helles could now carry on up to about February 15 with its present stock.

Financially Helles should now be able to support itself out of profits. Through the Field Cashier I have returned three amounts to the account of the Y.M.C.A., Anglo-Egyptian Bank, Cairo, amounting in all to £120.

Our relations with the chaplains have throughout been most cordial; services have been held every Sunday and Wednesday, which are always crowded; prayers every evening with few exceptions; concerts on Thursdays.

As my contract with the Y.M.C.A. expires on December 31 and as Mr. MacDonald returned to Imbros on December 15 on the evacuation of Anzac, it was arranged in consultation between Owens, MacDonald, and myself, and with the approval of Mr. Shapley, that he should take over the work at Helles, and I left the Peninsula on December 20.

WILTON RIX,
T.S. Anchises,
Christmas Eve, 1915.

The difficulties alluded to in these reports are inevitable if work in the forward area is undertaken. The difficulties are the difficulties of transport—and there is always the difficulty of transport until the position is stabilized, and consequently business organized. However, Mr. Jessop at the time tried very hard to secure a supply ship—in other words, to charter a ship,

Digitized by Google

fill her with supplies, and use her as a canteen ship—as the following Report will show:

While at the Dardanelles I heard constantly, and from many sources, ranging from G.O.C.'s to privates, that the greatest need of the troops was facilities for purchasing at reasonable rates a few relishes and delicacies that would help to make the present monotonous food supply a little more palatable. The conditions in which the men live are indescribable. The flies are a veritable plague; the smells are at times almost unbearable; the sights are enough to unnerve anyone; the strain of the trench fighting is terrific, and the effect on the nerves of always being under fire from either shrapnel, sniper, or spent bullet is almost beyond endurance when continued for weeks, and in some cases for months. Now while the food provided is plenty and wholesome, of very necessity it lacks variety, and taken constantly in these surroundings it is no wonder that the men's appetites go, and that they crave something to give it a little different taste, —pickles, Worcester sauce, something pungent to take away the awful taste that one gets that is a constant reminder of death and decay.

The hope expressed while I was over there was for a supply ship, supposed to be coming out by order of the Government, and containing just those things for which the men crave, and arrangements made whereby the men could get them as they need. Three months ago this hope was very strong, but I think they have given it up entirely. The G.O.C. wrote only a few days ago that the scheme had fallen through and expressing his regret, as he said some of his men were literally starving for the need of some such change in their diet that would make their present monotonous but wholesome food palatable. The idea came to me, and has grown since my return, that the Association could not render a greater service than by appealing to the people of England to furnish a supply ship and send it out under competent officials who would see to the proper distribution of these articles, not as gifts, but at a price as near the home price as possible. There will be no financial loss in such a venture, unless perchance the stuff was torpedoed or lost in some other way. My scheme, briefly, is this: a ship of from 2,000 to 5,000 tons; supplies £100,000, to consist of pickles, sauces, tinned fruits, chocolate, acidulated sweets, lime juice, tinned meats of

Digitized by Google

an entirely different nature from the usual bully beef served to the men, a mineral-water plant, condensing plant, bakery, and possibly a refrigerator, but this will not be necessary during the winter months.

One of the great difficulties is the landing of supplies. With our own steamer we would be independent, and could go from place to place, carrying our base with us without having to trouble either naval or military for transport, Now this may seem a wild scheme to you, but I have talked the matter over with Sir Henry MacMahon, Army officers, and Government officials, and they say it would meet the greatest need of the men at the front at the present time. Those I have spoken to, however, think there would be no difficulty in getting the British people to subscribe to such a venture. Personally, I think the plan could be made to pay for itself, but we should need a large financial backing until the returns come in from sales. Suppose large firms such as Crosse & Blackwell, Huntley & Palmer, Liptons, and such others as you know would be willing to send a consignment of ten, fifteen, or twenty thousand pounds' worth of goods, taking the risk of their arriving safely, unless perchance a number of the Insurance Companies would pool the risk and cover the cargo for us as a war fund gift. However, the matter of a steamer may be difficult, but there are possibly some owners who would be willing to place a ship at our disposal at a nominal cost, or perhaps someone who has a steam yacht would loan it for this purpose. A volunteer crew I think could no doubt be secured, and competent accountants also to see to the proper disposal of the goods and accounting for same. If you think favourably of this scheme, cable me and I will let you have further particulars. I feel that it has got to be done, and I would like to see the Y.M.C.A. take it up. I feel if we do not, it will be done anyway, and by some organization or group of people who will not be able to handle it in a satisfactory manner. With the co-operation of the newspapers and the ship secured, I feel confident that the supplies can be collected, and by the time the cold weather begins we can be furnishing these brave fellows with the things so sorely needed to keep them in health and good spirits for the very trying campaign that is before them.

The ship was not sent, but the *Nero* arrived at Mudros just as the evacuation was taking place. This ship had

Digitized by Google

on board about £15,000 worth of stores for the Y.M.C.A., but was unfortunately too late to be of service on the Peninsula. However, the goods were used after the evacuation, and had the operations at the Dardanelles continued, these supplies would have been very useful.

After the evacuation centres still remained at Imbros, Mudros, and other places in the Eastern Mediterranean, but as Egypt was no longer the military base for these operations the Y.M.C.A. was also controlled separately, and Egypt was no longer responsible.

The workers who were sent from Egypt after Mr. Jessop's return from Gallipoli were: Mr. William Owens, Rev. Wilton Rix, Rev. J. K. Thomson, Mr. D. MacDonald, and Mr. G. Shapley (now secretary of Anzac Hostel).

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER VIII

1916

THE troops returned from the Dardanelles in 1916, and as they poured into Egypt, some of the difficulties of the first landing in Egypt were repeated. Men who had spent months at the Dardanelles naturally wanted management on their return, and the Y.M.C.A. activities in Egypt were pushed as far as possible. With the elimination of the Dardanelles from operations the problem altered. The Suez Canal was crossed, outposts were pushed into the desert to protect the Canal, and an advance was made in the direction of Romani, which is about thirty miles from Kantara. The battle of Romani was fought in the summer of 1916, and an advance was then made in the direction of Palestine; the battles of Magdaba and Rafa were fought, and Gaza was ultimately reached before the end of the year.

We have consequently now to follow the fortunes of the Y.M.C.A. both in Egypt, where the position was practically stationary, although the constant local shifting of camps and troops necessitated a corresponding movement on the part of the Y.M.C.A., and also the work on the east side of the Canal, where the position was more or less constantly fluid.

The story of what occurred up to April 1916, as set out below, provides a very good summary of the work which had been done.

Digitized by Google

REPORT OF THE PROCEEDINGS OF THE Y.M.C.A. ARMY WORK COMMITTEE FOR EGYPT AND THE NEAR EAST

Held at the Residency, Cairo, on Monday, April 10, 1916

Present: H.E. Sir Henry MacMahon (Chairman) and Lady MacMahon, R. E. Monteith-Smith (Chairman Executive Committee), W. Jessop (General Secretary), A. Lucas, E. R. Peacock (Chairman Australian National Committee), W. H. George (New Zealand National Committee), Sir Reginald Oakes, Major-General H. E. Stanton, Dr. S. M. Zwemer, Dr. F. H. Henry, A. P. Bolland, Capt. Trumper, The Rev. Gillan, The Rev. R. D. Downes, H. W. White, A. H. Johnson, W. Owens, J. L. Hay, J. F. Hopkins, S. N. Barling.

Dr. S. M. Zwemer opened the meeting with prayer.

The minutes of the last meeting were read and confirmed.

Mr. R. E. Monteith-Smith (Chairman of the Finance Committee) said:

Your Excellency, Lady MacMahon, Gentlemen,—As I was appointed the Chairman of the Finance Committee, it falls upon me to explain what we have done during the past year. As soon as we began it became evident that it was quite impossible for us to do only Finance work, and we therefore have acted as Executive Committee also. As such a Committee we enlarged ourselves to some extent. We were very glad indeed to have the assistance of Lord Radstock of the English National Council, and later Mr. George and Mr. Jamieson of New Zealand, and Mr. Peacock, the Chairman of the Australian National Council. They all have given very great assistance during the year's work, and we were grateful for their advice. The first duty we had to perform was that of Finance. I very much regret that

Digitized by Google

our Hon. Treasurer, Mr. Grainger-Stewart, is unable to be with us to-night, for he has done the work so admirably. The accounts in detail are not laid before you, but you will all see the statement showing the amounts we have received during the period, and how they have been spent. You will observe that we have a balance of about £10,000 in the Bank, and to this can be added about £1,000 which we have loaned to what we call the Business Trading Account, left in the very able hands of Mr. Johnson, and also, I think, about £600 in respect of the Esbekieh Soldiers' Club.

This Committee has been formed rather to give advice than to guide the many details of the work. Internal economy has been left in the hands of Mr. Jessop, but as far as possible we have given every assistance and advice we have been asked for. I may say that the principle underlying the whole work of the Association has been to follow the troops wherever they have gone; at any rate the Association has endeavoured to do this, with the result that a very large number of huts have been erected in Egypt.

We have, as you know, erected many huts around Cairo, a large building in Alexandria and also tents and huts; we have a house at Port Said and a building at Suez, as well as three or four other centres along the Canal, and also at Wardan, Fayoum, and Mersa Matruh. In fact where the troops have gone it has been the principle of the Association to follow as soon as possible.

I should like to speak of the personnel of the Y.M.C.A., and the cordial feelings of harmony amongst the workers. The men have made no complaints, though so often they have had every room for complaint. They have received only enough to give them bread-and-butter, and have been working every day and all day, month in and month out, giving all their time, energy, and ability to the work of the Association; men who are not here to-night, one and all have worked splendidly and with one object in view, the real aim of the Association. I would also like to say for myself how greatly we are indebted to Mr. Jessop for his indefatigable zeal. He has been ably assisted by Mr. White, who we are extremely sorry to know is leaving for America at the end of this month. I want to take this opportunity of expressing my thanks as Chairman of the Executive for the extraordinary work done by all members.

Mr. Monteith-Smith's Report was adopted, and the

Digitized by Google

status of the Finance Committee acting as an Executive was confirmed.

Mr. Jessop, General Secretary, suggesting that his report should be given later, said:

Brevity is the soul of wit, and I think the soul also of reports. I have arranged for some of my staff to give reports of three minutes' duration each, giving the salient points of their own particular work. These will cover the various phases of our work, and will prove, I think, more interesting than one lengthy report.

(Mr. Owens's Report appears in another chapter, Ch. VI.)

The next Report was given by Mr. J. L. Hay, who is in charge of the Soldiers' Recreation Club, Esbekieh Gardens:—

During the middle of last year there was a great need for work in Cairo, and after a good deal of difficulty and effort we were able to commence work in the Esbekieh Gardens. As you know, we took the big skating rink in the centre of the Gardens. With the help of the Military Authorities and Government, the ground was secured on very favourable conditions. This was first intended as a big counteracting agency against the forces of evil in Cairo. This was in last August, and the Club was then opened by General Maxwell. The character of the work carried on is, of course, similar to all Y.M.C.A. activities, and the general policy adopted by the Association, as I have said, "Primarily counteracting." In this respect it was necessary to provide something in the way of vigorous recreation and entertainment, and our motto has always been "something on every night" as far as possible. The men have responded to a remarkable degree. Entertainments are run on the same lines as in all Y.M.C.A. centres, every facility is given for reading and writing, and there are ample games.

Further, every soldier is welcome, every unit, Colonial or English. The Soldiers' Recreation Club is unique in that it centralizes the men of all forces and brings together men from all parts of the Empire. Here come men from England, Scotland, Ireland, Wales, Australia, Canada, New Zealand, India, South

Digitized by Google

Africa, West Indies, etc., and on Saturday I had the pleasure of taking a photograph of such a representative group. The work has developed to a very great extent; we are told by the Post Office officials that we have posted as many as 7,000 letters per day. The Buffet is of the best, and I cannot speak too highly of the ladies who have given their services free and gladly. I am not a believer in figures, but the following will give you some idea of the work: 60,000 cakes per week, 400 loaves of bread per day, as well as thousands of cups of tea, coffee, etc.

The Club is still well patronized, though a large number of troops have now left the district. My time is up, but I should just like to read a letter received:

"*To the Hon. Secretary, Y.M.C.A., Cairo.*

"Just a word of admiration and appreciation. Nobody feels happy when they have a fixed idea and opinion upset, but I have been forced to overcome such a feeling, and whole-heartedly congratulate the admirable work of your Organization. Owing to circumstances over which we have no control, I always looked upon the Y.M.C.A. as a strictly sectarian institute of narrow and fixed principles, but the grand work accomplished here has forced me, at first against my will, to openly admire your principles and their results, which I am happy to say are anything but narrow and sectarian. If the Y.M.C.A. does not boom in Australia after this struggle ceases, please do not blame the late Army of Occupation, because I am sure it will not be their fault.

"With hearty congratulations,

"Yours in admiration,

"SGT. . . . . ."

Dr. S. H. Kennedy was then asked to give a résumé of the work in Alexandria, and he said:

I have been engaged in this work since the beginning of July last, and have seen the work at Alexandria grow from its small beginning to its present size. In Alexandria the work is divided

Digitized by Google

into work (1) in Camps (run on similar lines to the work here in Cairo), and (2) the Central Building in Alexandria itself. Now as to the work in Camps:

(1) *Sidi Bishr.*—We have three centres, one a large hut which was originally made for the Dardanelles. This is much appreciated, especially as we are able to sell tea and coffee; we are not allowed to call it a canteen. Then we have a Royal Engineers Hut holding 300 men, and this has been used to the utmost extent for reading and writing. Then we have a group of huts, originally used by missionaries, given to us by the American Mission. These have been renovated by us, and great interest is taken in them by the Commanding Officers, as well as the men. These centres I consider to be the finest Y.M.C.A. in Egypt. On Friday the refreshment hut was used to such an extent that something like £46 was taken in half-piastres (a piastre equals 2½*d.*).

(2) At Mustapha permanent Barracks, we have a large frame hut which was there before my connection with Alexandria. This is being used day after day and night after night, and the men appreciate the place tremendously.

At Ras-el-Tin we have a mat hut in the Convalescent Home, which has been there since last July. This is a great boon to the patients, where they have little to do but sit about. When I left at 12 this morning, it was fairly full, men writing, reading, and playing games.

The Military have loaned us two huts for the Mex Camp, and these are always well patronized.

Then as to the Central Building, I can hardly say what an important part this has played in Y.M.C.A. work. It is always bright and cheerful, and is thronged with men, so much so that now we have found it necessary to extend the premises very much, and we hope to open the extension on Saturday, April 15.

The Rev. R. D. Downes was asked to make a few remarks on the hospital work. He said:

I must apologize for these few remarks being rather personal, but my experience of the work in hospitals has been gained through dealing with three places—Citadel Hospital, Bulac Dacrour Convalescent Home, and the Australian Dermatological Hospital. Until the middle of October I was working at the

Digitized by Google

Citadel Hospital, sitting on the beds of the patients, and trying to bring a little cheer into their lives, and distributing papers, etc. A library was opened for the men, and we also had a small place in the grounds provided by the O.C. for entertainments, concerts, meetings, etc., during the evenings. After leaving there I went to the Bulac Palace, and the O.C. at once handed over the big hall of the Palace, and asked me to provide all recreation and entertainments for the men. The Major was one of those who believed that men cannot recover without something to occupy their minds and to keep them cheerful. The Major especially asked for evening prayers to be established, and I believe at his own expense he fitted up for my private room the summer house in the grounds. I spent the afternoon in taking out parties of the patients to the Pyramids and other places of interest in and around Cairo. Altogether I do not think any Secretary could have such a delightful time as I did in this beautiful palace, amongst thousands of roses.

Leaving this place to go to the Dermatological Hospital was like leaving Bloomsbury to go to the Mile End slums. The Abbassia Hospital had been much neglected, I suppose because the men were there primarily on account of their own sin, and were looked upon rather as lepers. Nothing was done for them, and they had nothing to do except, I am sorry to say, gamble as far as it was possible. However, last week, Sir William Willcocks gave a lecture (Mr. Jessop also being present) and a very fine hut was opened which is now warmly patronized. Through the kindness of Lady Tullibardine we already have a library of 400 books, and there is a great demand for these. This morning for an hour and a half there was a great crowd, waiting to get something to read. Most of these poor fellows seem more to be pitied than blamed, and I have never received such gratitude as from the Australian boys. The only pity is that the Y.M.C.A. was not started there before. We hope to get concert parties and the like to visit us, but it is of course rather difficult in such a place.

Mr. H. W. White, who has been in charge of the Religious Work Campaign, said:

No one knows better than the Secretary out in the Camp that the writing paper and canteens, etc., cannot supply all the

Digitized by Google

needs of the men; the needs that lie deepest are in men's hearts and minds, and these are the needs that we must satisfy. This was felt by the leaders of the Association in England, and they have instituted a campaign. We do not know what has been done over there, but we do know what has been accomplished here in Egypt. We have held campaign meetings in our thirty-five centres in order to give to the men the message of hope and cheer, the message of a fight for character, and to give the men an opportunity of making a stand which is after all the best way to bring victory to Christ. Larger numbers of men have gathered for these meetings than for any concert party or anything else we have arranged for them. We have had splendid co-operation from the chaplains, the missionaries, and others. Two thousand men have come out stating they wanted to live a better life, and many of them have fully decided in their own minds that they should live better lives. Thousands of men have signed our War Roll, which is simply a declaration of allegiance to Jesus Christ. I wish you could have been with one of our speakers at Tel-el-Kebir. Away out on the desert he was met by a man who said "I am illegitimate, and nobody cares for me." He was weeping like a child, but what a difference the message of hope and love has made to him! So it has gone on. After all the greatest need of these men is something that is deep, something that will help them in their fight for character, in their individual lives, and in the life of the nation.

Lt.-Commander Trumper of Port Said put in a strong plea for more centres along the Canal, and spoke of the great difficulties the men had to contend with.

His Excellency then called on Mr. Jessop, the General Secretary, to make his statement.

Mr. Jessop said: With regard to the Financial Statement, I should like to say that only in the past two or three months have we had such a credit balance as the statement before you shows. Simultaneously we received fairly large sums from home, as well as from Australia and New Zealand. I thought Mr. Monteith-Smith was going to tell you of some of the early days when we were frequently placed with a debit balance, and when £1 seemed as big as £100 does now. I remember how at the

Digitized by Google

first meeting of our local Committee after war was declared, I asked for a grant of £20 to start the work in the Heliopolis Camp; they agreed to this on condition that I should go out and raise it. The balance we have in hand should by no means discourage us in our efforts to secure more funds, for we must look forward to the continuance of this work for some considerable time, and we shall need fully another £10,000 before the end of the year if we carry on the work on the present scale.

In connection with our work we have now 58 men serving us, as well as 15 women giving their whole time and 35 giving part-time service. We have 40 centres extending from Suez to Mersa Matruh, and this week we are sending a marquee and full equipment right out to Solloum. We have requests for centres along the Canal at Ballah, Ferdan, Shallufa, Geneffe, Kubri, and El Shatt. Mat huts will be finished in a day or two at Serapeum and Ferry Post, and the marquees in those places will be sent forward to the railhead right out in the desert on the other side of the Canal. To-morrow I hope to meet the Post Commandant at Ballah, and visit other places along the Canal up to Port Said. It is very difficult to get material, but we are doing our best to persuade the Military to let us have some of their timber, and General Williams has kindly promised to help in any way he can. We shall use tents for the troops going further out. Besides the Canal we are asked to send workers to Zagazig and Asyut, and we have decided already to send three more marquees to Fayoum.

In closing I should like to say that from the very beginning of this work when I first called on His Excellency Sir Henry MacMahon, I have always received the greatest consideration and I appreciate very much indeed the great help he has given me. There has never been a time in my life when I have more enjoyed a work than this during the past few months, and the appreciation of the troops has paid for every bit of effort put into it.

Mr. E. R. Peacock (Chairman of the Australian National Council) then said:

As an official representative from Australia, I should first of all like to acknowledge to yourself and Lady MacMahon our appreciation of the great interest and personal help you have given this movement. I was speaking to Colonel Barrett, who

Digitized by Google

knows something of the early history of the movement here, and of the great difficulties that were overcome largely by your help, and therefore on behalf of Australia generally and officially of the National Council of the Y.M.C.A. I want to make this acknowledgment. I have been connected with the Association for forty years, and one's ideals are now being realized, and we have benefited by experience. Our Association will become a strong part of our civilian life. I am glad to have been of service in Egypt, especially in the co-ordination of the work here. In the past there have been quite a number of detached efforts, but now all are under the one Executive you have established. Changes are frequent, and we must just go on with the work and do the very best we can. We now have sixteen men on the field from Australia and seven more are due to arrive in a few days. Australia is rising to the need of the field, and nearly £30,000 has been raised for the foreign work. I sympathize entirely with Captain Trumper with regard to the need for centres along the Canal. The public of Australia are placing very great confidence in us, and have risen to the great opportunity we have in this work in Egypt.

Dr. S. M. Zwemer (Editor of *Moslem World*) said :

From the outset, when the original troops came to Cairo, the various missions have not only given hearty co-operation, but have become the back-bone and strength of the evangelistic campaign. We all know of the great and good work done by the various churches—All Saints' Church, the Bishop in Jerusalem, the Rev. Horan, and also the magnificent work done by the Rev. and Mrs. Gillan. We also know of the real help and co-operation of the Missions—C.M.S., E.G.M., British and Foreign Bible Society, and last but not least the American Mission. As you have already heard, four of our missionaries are giving their full time in the huts turned over to the Y.M.C.A. at Sidi Bishr. We, as a Committee, ought to cultivate and invite the co-operation of all the branches of the Church of Jesus Christ our Head.

His Excellency then rose to summarize :

The reports which you have just heard give a comprehensive review of the working of the Y.M.C.A. during the past year in

Digitized by Google

Egypt and the Near East. These reports have been most interesting, and I wish it had been a longer list. They furnish a record of a year of work in wartime of which our Association may justly be proud. The various branches of work which the Y.M.C.A. have undertaken are so numerous that it is impossible for us, within the limit of these few remarks, to go into voluminous details of all that has been done. It will suffice to sum up our doings in brief form. Our work, as you see, falls under two main heads—viz. work at the Front, and work at the Base.

At the Front the Y.M.C.A. have had to provide for the requirements of our troops, not only on the Suez Canal and in the Western Desert of Egypt, but at Salonika, and last, but not least, at Gallipoli, where, as you have heard to-night, the need of the Y.M.C.A. was greatest, and where the means of carrying it out were extremely dangerous and difficult. I myself visited the beaches and know the conditions under which that work was done, generally to the accompaniment of shells, making things very unpleasant.

But even more important than our work at the Front has been, and is, our work at the base of operations such as Mudros, Imbros, and Egypt. At the base our work has fallen under two main categories, viz. first, in providing for the requirements of the sick and wounded in hospitals and convalescent camps, and secondly in providing the needs for those who are well and whole, the latter being far the greater in number; their needs are more numerous and complicated, and on them in consequence the greater part of our energies have had to be directed. It has been necessary to provide places of repose and quiet recreation in camps in order to give the men comfort and conveniences which military camps do not afford; but also it has been necessary to provide in the centres of the large towns places of innocent recreation and entertainment which can not only furnish our men with what they require in the way of refreshment and amusement, but can successfully compete with the attractions of public places of refreshment and amusement that lead men into trouble. All this, as you can imagine, is a very difficult and complicated task, requiring not only ample funds and expert financial administration, but vast resources in the form of ideas and conceptions, and also of men with ability and energy, and above all the self-devotion to carry them out. From the reports we have heard to-night, we get a glimpse into the various phases of the

Digitized by Google

work which the Y.M.C.A. has been doing. Looking at it as a whole, as I have done, during the year, both as a member of the Association and as the High Commissioner of this country, I have been profoundly impressed with the magnitude of the work, and above all with its success. I have heard on all sides appreciation of this work expressed by the Generals and Commanders of our forces, and I am not going too far in saying the Y.M.C.A. plays quite as important a part in a war by promoting the health and well-being of the troops and thereby keeping them out of hospital, as our medical services and Red Cross do by looking after them when they get there.

As Chairman of this Committee, I desire to place on record my sincere appreciation of the devoted services of all those able officers of the Y.M.C.A. who have contributed towards this good work, and especially do I refer to our energetic and indefatigable Secretary, Mr. Jessop, to whom we all owe so much. I also take this opportunity of expressing, in the name of this Committee, our cordial thanks to those chaplains of various denominations and those members of the various Missionary Societies who have accorded kindly and welcome assistance to our Association; I refer especially to the C.M.S., to the E.G.M., and last, but not least, to the American Mission.

I cannot conclude without saying how much we welcome to our meeting to-night the visitors who have honoured us with their presence. I refer to Mr. Peacock from Australia. I am sorry Mr. Jamieson, the Chairman of the New Zealand Council, is not with us, but we are glad that Mr. George, a member of the Council, is present.

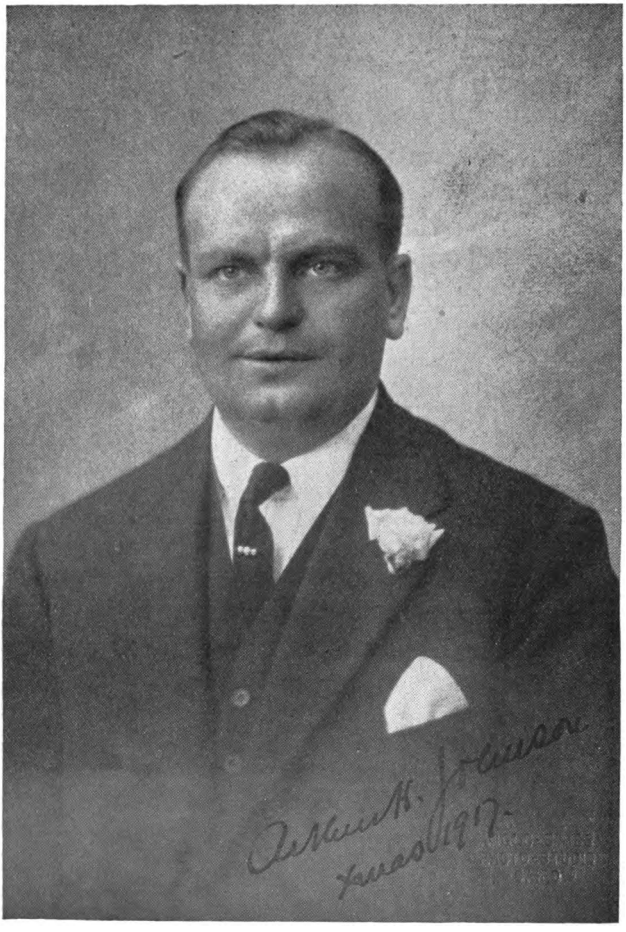
I feel sure that they have seen enough of the work of the Y.M.C.A. here to satisfy them that the money so generously subscribed by Australia and New Zealand to this work is being well expended. I thank Mr. Peacock for the kind way in which he has referred to Lady MacMahon and myself. I need hardly say how great a pleasure it has been to me to do anything I could to assist in every way possible the brave men Australia has sent to fight for our Empire.

The Rev. Mr. Gillan concluded the meeting by pronouncing the Benediction.

At the commencement of 1916 practically no work

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google



Arthur H. Johnson.
Business Secretary.

[*To face page* 95

Digitized by Google

had been started in the Canal Zone. However, the troops were massed on the east side of the Canal from Port Said to Suez, and from these bases railways were pushed out with camps at the railheads and beyond. At that time the Commander-in-Chief told Mr. Jessop that he considered that the most important thing for the men after their mess huts was the Y.M.C.A. recreation huts.

The Canal work was at this time placed under the supervision of Mr. Owens and based on Ismailia. In the base camps mat huts were erected—roomy, airy structures, 100 feet by 35 feet—while marquees were used at the railheads.

All these centres were equipped with canteens, which department, then as now, was in the hands of Mr. Arthur Johnson of the English National Council, who fully developed this side of the work. I quote an incident of the manner in which one of these canteens far out in the desert served the men:

"At one of the railhead camps, after a busy day, the secretary was turning in about 11.15 p.m., when a lieutenant came in. 'Sorry to bother you, but could you do anything for my men? They have been marching from the Base all the afternoon, and will arrive pretty well done up, with no provision made for them. Do you think you could scrape some cocoa together for them?' Well, the day had been a very heavy one, but when the 700 dust-covered, weary, parched men arrived shortly after midnight, they found a warm welcome and sufficient cocoa, tea, and lime juice to satisfy the almost bottomless pit of their combined thirst. They marched off about 3 a.m. The secretary turned into his bunk at 3.30, but after two hours' dreaming of 'The

Digitized by Google

Home Fires Burning' another lieutenant broke in on behalf of his seventy men, who had been marching all night, and in less than thirty minutes the secretary was as hard at it as he had been three hours before. No one who has not been right in it can quite understand the conditions and circumstances of these experiences in the desert camps."

"The transport of the large quantity of supplies was always attended with great difficulty. Several trucks daily were sent from Cairo. The stores in turn had to be transferred across the Canal, and then to the rail-heads on the narrow-gauge railways. From thence camel or other transport provided by the military was used. At times a string of a hundred camels could be seen each with the familiar sign of the Red Triangle on its back!

"The Australian Red Cross very kindly lent a motor boat, which proved invaluable to our work during the operations on the Canal.

"And so all over the Canal Zone the trail of the troops was a road leading to the Y.M.C.A."

On September 30 the following letter was received from the G.O.C.-in-C., E.E.F., General Sir Archibald Murray, which illustrates the cordial way in which the military have supported the work of the Y.M.C.A.:

"GENERAL HEAD-QUARTERS,
"EGYPTIAN EXPEDITIONARY FORCE.
"*September* 30, 1916.

"DEAR MR. JESSOP,

"On August 23 you asked me for my personal view on, and criticism regarding, the work of the Y.M.C.A. in this country. I cannot do better than

Digitized by Google

forward you the accompanying extracts from reports I have received from the various Commanders of the Force under my command, in all of which I heartily concur. I, and the troops under my command, owe a debt to your association which we can never repay. The name of Lord Radstock has been very favourably mentioned to me for excellent work in inspecting the various institutes, and I feel I should be doing less than my duty were I not to quote, and cordially agree with, the following paragraph contained in the report of Lieut.-General E. A. Altham, my Inspector-General of Communications:

"'I feel bound to add my personal gratitude to the Secretary of the Egyptian branch of the Y.M.C.A., Mr. Jessop, for the yeoman service he has rendered to the army during the last two years, and especially for the quickness of his response to any personal appeals made to him for special help during the last year in Egypt. The debt which is due to him from the whole E.E.F. is a very great one.'

"Believe me,

"Yours sincerely,

"(*Signed*) A. J. MURRAY, *General*,

"*Commander-in-Chief, Egyptian Expeditionary Force.*"

I enclose for the information of the Commander-in-Chief reports as to the work done by the Y.M.C.A. For myself I can only say that, both at Mudros and here in Egypt, I have found the Y.M.C.A. the greatest possible assistance in promoting the welfare and comfort of the soldier. It has been an organization not only steadily and on its own initiative carrying out most valuable work, but presenting a reserve force on which the Military Authorities could call when face to face with a situation or emergency which our own resources could not cope with.

Mr. Jessop's present inquiry refers only to the work done in Egypt. It would therefore be out of place to set forth the great

Digitized by Google

assistance the Y.M.C.A. rendered to the old M.E.F. during the conduct of the Gallipoli campaign, but, as instances of the manner in which they have taken up what may be called emergency demands made specially on them by the Military Authorities in Egypt, I would mention specially the cases of the Anzac Hostel in Cairo and of the Rest Camp at Sidi Bishr, Alexandria, the details of which the Commander-in-Chief is well acquainted with. I am convinced that every General Officer who has come in contact with the Y.M.C.A., and seen the result of its last twelve months' work in Egypt, will find it difficult to express his gratitude for the existence of such an organization and for the work it has done.

In camps, hutments, and bivouacs close to the firing line, the Y.M.C.A. institutes not only add greatly to the comfort of the men, but are, I believe, a real aid to the efficiency of the Army by the assistance given in maintaining its physical condition. On the Lines of Communication, especially in cities such as Alexandria and Cairo, the effect of the work is even more far-reaching, for it tends to shield the soldier from moral dangers and from the contraction of diseases which may render him for a long time incapable of active service.

. . . . .

The work of the Y.M.C.A. is so conspicuous amongst the troops in Egypt that the traveller by train has only to look out of the window to assure himself of the fact that the Association follows the flag with persistent fidelity. Their huts and marquees attract the eye at every station where troops are quartered. To my knowledge at least twenty-seven of these have been erected in the Delta District and Tel-el-Kebir within the last eighteen months. The latest was opened at Ismailia last July with the eager concurrence, if not at the actual instigation, of the Administration Commandant. The great majority have, however, been closed owing to the departure of the troops for whose welfare they were opened, but wherever troops are found, even in very small numbers, the Y.M.C.A. is sure to be represented. And this could not happen if its work were not warmly encouraged by the Military Authorities.

It is unnecessary for me to mention the case of the Anzac Hostel. It is so well known to the I.G.C.

. . . . .

I beg to report that I cannot say too much in favour of the

Digitized by Google

Y.M.C.A. hut in Mustapha Camp. It is always full of men writing and reading, and is freely lent for concert parties.

. . . . .

The Rev. S. H. Kennedy, Senior Secretary of the Y.M.C.A., Alexandria, having informed me of his intention of closing a Y.M.C.A. hut in Sidi Bishr Camp, I consider it just that I should write my appreciation of the good work and popularity of these institutions, of which there are two in camp here.

From my personal observations I have found these institutions very well attended, often crowded, which speaks for itself, especially in a camp like Sidi Bishr, where there are so many counter-attractions, such as numerous well-built dry canteens, mostly containing pianos and gramophones, which are most popular with men in camp. Plenty of literature and the best of food are supplied, sanitation and cleanliness never being lost sight of for a moment. Music and plays are frequent. All sorts of games are provided.

In the Fresh Air Camp Y.M.C.A. all arrangements are really admirable, great thought and ingenuity being given to provide everything a man can want. Besides many rooms, a large silence writing room is usually full of men, where all the materials are of course provided free. In fact, the Fresh Air Y.M.C.A. is the most perfectly found centre it has ever been my pleasure to come across. It is right to record that the large huts attached to the main building were built by Government, a spacious collection named on a board attached "Kitchener's Hall."

The reason for closing one Y.M.C.A. hut here is the paucity of men now in camp, and the call for more of the Staff in the Canal Zone.

. . . . .

The Y.M.C.A. Head-quarters, Alexandria, situated between the Metropole Hotel and the Camp, are extensively used by the N.C.O.'s and men employed in the 3rd Echelon, between three and four hundred making use of this building daily.

The Garden Court, recently added, is especially appreciated, and greater use would be made of it were refreshments supplied there at all hours instead of only during the cinema performance.

. . . . .

When the Royal Naval Division disembarked at short notice in April 1915, Port Said, hitherto garrisoned by Indian troops,

Digitized by Google

had no institution or tea-rooms organized by voluntary effort to keep troops out of the many temptations of its streets. The Y.M.C.A. rose splendidly to the occasion, and has continued its good work without a break.

Incessant variation in the number of troops in the garrison (from 3,000 to 25,000) has tested severely the business capacity of the local committee, and it is encouraging to know that the latter has not failed in this respect.

The credit for the work belongs fairly to Lieutenant-Commander Trumper, R.N.R., to Mr. Couper (Secretary), and above all to Mrs. Trumper.

I do not doubt indeed that all large centres of troops throughout the Canal are well served by the Y.M.C.A. On the other hand, small detachments stationed at the unimportant posts between these centres have little done to alleviate the tedium and loneliness of their situation. Within fifteen miles of Port Said I can count eight such posts, and no doubt similar stations exist throughout the length of the Canal. To provide each post or station with an institute is, of course, out of the question, even if there were no financial considerations in the way, but I venture to make the suggestion that the regular visit of a representative of the Y.M.C.A. provided with books and games, which could be passed from one post to another, would be a very great comfort to these lonely men. An occasional visit from an Inspecting Officer is all that breaks the monotony of their lives; although, in the case of Port Said, the Camp Welfare Committee has responded to every appeal I have made for books and games, such gifts are vicarious.

. . . . .

The work done by the Y.M.C.A. is much appreciated throughout the section.

In addition to providing drinks and refreshments which are satisfactory in every way, the Association has instituted facilities for reading and writing, and in one sub-section a library has been established.

There are no criticisms to make on the excellent work done by the Y.M.C.A.

. . . . .

Towards the end of 1916 the work was distributed as shown in Appendix III. The statement, however,

Digitized by Google

must be taken as only approximately correct, as owing to the pressure of work and constant movement of secretaries during 1915 and 1916, the accurate keeping of records was well-nigh impossible.

Special features of 1916 were the establishment of a "Y.M.C.A." at the Rest Camp at Sidi Bishr, Alexandria, and, as already indicated, the taking over of Anzac Hostel.

Towards the end of the year, some centres in the Canal Zone were closed, and new ones were opened in the desert beyond Kantara.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER IX

WORK IN THE SUDAN

THERE is always placed in the Sudan a certain number of English Garrison troops, and they are usually distributed in four places—at Khartoum, at Atbara, at Port Sudan, and at Gebeit—and provision has to be made by the Y.M.C.A. for the reasonable social wants of these men. Until recently the work in the Sudan has been under the charge of Mr. D. N. MacDiarmid of Australia. Mr. Jessop visited the Sudan himself at the end of 1916, in order to make initial arrangements. The story of the development is perhaps better told in Mr. MacDiarmid's words:

Twelve months ago, when I was in Cairo after a year's work in the Libyan Desert, I was told that my future sphere, for some months at least, was to be the Sudan; that the country was about one million square miles in extent, that I should be the only Secretary in the country, and that it was my business to provide recreation and inspiration for the soldiers stationed there. It seemed a tall order. On reaching the Sudan, however, I speedily found that, although I was not expected to cover the whole country, the problem presented was not the number of soldiers to be served, but how to reach those that were there. The Head-quarters of my work was to be in Khartoum, the nearest "outstation" 200 miles away, and the furthest Y.M.C.A. room 500 miles from Khartoum. It was a question of distance rather than of numbers. Thanks to the travelling facilities afforded by the Sudan Government and the courtesy of the Military Authorities, the Y.M.C.A. has been able to face the problem and in some measure to solve it.

Digitized by Google

There are now Y.M.C.A. rooms at four centres in the Sudan; Khartoum, Atbara, Port Sudan, and Gebeit in the Red Sea Hills. The last-named building is open only during the summer months when troops go to the hills for a rest. A thousand miles travelling per month allows me to visit these various Y.M.C.A. rooms in order to see that all is going on well; while I am away excellent soldier orderlies carry on the canteen work and keep the places going. Strange as it seems to speak of sailors in the Sudan, one of the Recreation Rooms, that at Port Sudan, is for sailors as well as for soldiers, and has proved a great boon to the bluejackets who get shore leave when their ship is coaling or taking in water at the port. This room was opened at the request of the Naval and Military Authorities, and it has amply justified expectations.

There is, I suppose, hardly a country in the world with a higher average temperature than the Sudan. "The winter there," as someone facetiously said, "lasts from Christmas Day to January 2, and all the rest of the year is midsummer." While not quite so bad as that perhaps, the climate is excessively hot; the troops stationed here find it very trying. As a result of the great heat the men have very few military duties to perform; and when it is remembered that in all such countries as this, where black meets white, the opportunities for getting into mischief are endless, it will be seen that there is definite scope for Red Triangle activity.

One of the chief duties of the Y.M.C.A. is to provide not only shelter from the heat of the sun, cold drinks for the thirsty, food for the hungry, and inspiration for all, but also to stimulate mental activity in a climate which tends to deaden the thinking faculties. Series of lectures on all manner of subjects are, therefore, arranged in all the different centres. These are given by the padres, the officers, by myself, or very often by civilians stationed in the Sudan. The subjects dealt with vary from "Liquid Air" to "Mosquitoes," "Roman History" to "Scenic New Zealand," and from "Sociology" to "The Mahdi Rebellion"; but whatever the subject, the interest displayed by the men is very great and there is a constant demand for lectures and more lectures.

The thanks for what the Y.M.C.A. is endeavouring to do is shown in various ways; by the Government, in granting facilities for travel and funds for building; by the officers, in words and

Digitized by Google

letters of thanks; by the men, in an "inarticulate" friendliness for the "Y.M. man" which is the most appreciated.

At Port Sudan the blue-jackets required attention as well as the soldiers, and the movement included the training of boy scouts of the Gordon College, Khartoum.

This work in the Sudan typifies the essentials of the Y.M.C.A. work. Here are these four remote places: Khartoum, Atbara, Gebeit, and Port Sudan; soldiers must be kept in these places; who is to cater for their social wants during the long period of waiting? It is absolutely necessary for their mental, physical, and moral health that something should be done. Here is an organization prepared to send officers to these places who are trained to work of the kind, and the military gladly accept the assistance.

The following is a copy of a letter sent to Mr. MacDiarmid by the Sirdar, with regard to the work done in the Sudan.

"THE PALACE, KHARTOUM.
"*September* 30, 1917.

"D. N. MACDIARMID, ESQ.,
"SECRETARY, Y.M.C.A., KHARTOUM.

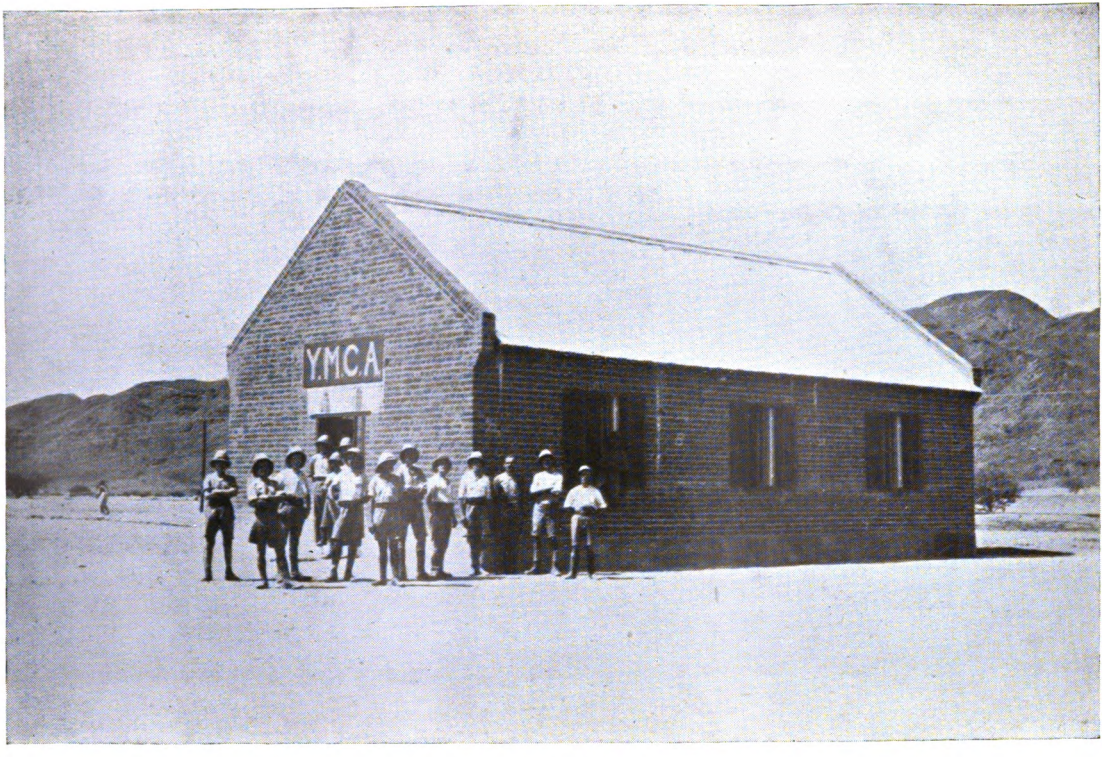
"SIR,

"I am very much obliged to you for your courteous letter of the 27th instant, and the photographs enclosed in it, which I was much interested to see.

"I feel that any efforts of mine to help are insignificant compared with the work that is being done for our soldiers by the keenness and sympathy of those who like yourself have devoted themselves to the Y.M.C.A.

"Nevertheless I am very glad to think that anything

Digitized by Google



Y.M.C.A., Ghebit, Sudan.

To face page 104]

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

I may have done has been of service to the Y.M.C.A. in this country.

"Yours faithfully,
"(*Signed*) L. O. F. M. STACK."

A club, similar to the Esbekieh Club, Cairo, has been opened at Khartoum, and is called "Esbekieh"; the word Esbekieh has for this and other reasons become generic.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER X

WESTERN DESERT

During 1915 those who followed events in Egypt had become aware of the fact that the Senussi—a religious tribe living in the Western Desert and Tripoli—were militant, and had to be dealt with. A reference to the map will show that they might have progressed in the various oases beginning on the coast, passing through Siwa, and reaching Kharga, and in that way have entered Egypt from the west. Accordingly small detachments of men were placed in these oases, and a certain number of men were stationed in some of the towns of Upper Egypt. It will be remembered that the Senussi were completely defeated and dispersed in November 1915, and after that date it was no longer necessary to occupy the interior oases. The occupation was limited to Solloum, Mersa Matruh, Sherika, and Siwa. Nothing more remote from civilization can be imagined than life in one of the oases, and while they possess an interest of their own, it is an interest which sooner or later is bound to flag unless, as was sometimes the case, you happened to be an American living there to study the movement of sandhills. The Y.M.C.A. accordingly sent representatives to these remote places, who did the work in the customary way. An interesting account is given of one of these outposts, the Kharga Oasis in

Digitized by Google

the Libyan Desert, by Mr. MacDiarmid, who subsequently took over the work in the Sudan:

A Y.M.C.A. HUT IN THE SAHARA[1]

Before attempting any account of the work that is being done here under the auspices of the Y.M.C.A. let me give a brief description of the locality. I am writing from a Y.M.C.A. hut, which I was instructed to open in a so-called oasis in that part of the Sahara known as the Libyan Desert. It is a very long way from Cairo, and shut off from civilization. Once this was a real oasis with many hundreds of acres of palm groves and vineyards, and by all accounts it was a most beautiful place. It is right on the caravan route to Dafur and, therefore, used to be very important and prosperous. The very ancient Egyptians apparently cultivated it, as relics of prehistoric Egyptians are found here; but many other nations have also gathered its harvests of dates. The Persians have left the sign of their dominion in the shape of the beautiful Temple of Hibis, which was built by Kings Darius I and II. The Romans also occupied it, and Horace spent some time here as a prisoner. In all directions are to be seen the ruins of Roman baths, wells, and temples; in fact, these industrious people must have put in a lot of their time constructing buildings. Afterwards Bishop Nestorius and Athanasius and a great many other early Christians fled or were banished to this place, and it became a stronghold of Nestorian Christianity. A very interesting Christian Necropolis, a veritable city of the dead, is one of the sights to which the very few travellers who now come here make a pilgrimage. The present inhabitants are a degraded tribe of Berberine extraction, very different from the ordinary Egyptian. The place is now in possession of a large force of troops, protected with many forts and trenches, and miles of barbed wire, who are watching for a somewhat mythical Senussi army.

On account of a process of gradual desiccation which seems to be taking place in various parts of North Africa, the sun and the sand have now reduced most of the oasis to the barrenness of the desert which separates us on the one side from the few other oases of the Sahara, and on the other from the Nile, 120

[1] *The Australasian Intercollegian*, September 1, 1916.

Digitized by Google

miles away. In those 120 miles to the Nile there is not a living soul to be seen, not a beast nor a bird, not a single tree or bush or any blade of grass, nothing but everlasting sandhills, and stony plains traversed by sandstone ridges—a sun-scorched, God-deserted wilderness. Woe betide the man or beast that is lost out there; he has an enemy to face more cruel and relentless than any Hun. We lost an aeroplane out there recently, and the blackened bodies of the crew were found where they had gone mad and died of thirst. And in the search we lost another man—literally baked to death in the blazing heat of the sand and sun. Herodotus called this oasis "The Island of the Blest." I have heard the soldiers use picturesque language about it, but expressive of a contrary opinion.

In this sun-stricken spot, 130 miles from the nearest town, in a desert where there is no shade, no village, no shops, except an indifferent Egyptian canteen where warm beer and other luxuries can be obtained—in this spot we have placed our Y.M.C.A. hut. On account of the heat the men are not called on to work between 9.30 a.m. and 4 p.m., and consequently have a great deal of time on their hands. The result has, therefore, been that from the day the Y.M.C.A. was opened up to now it has been full all the time.

This leads me to venture on an observation regarding that much-discussed theme, the relation of the "sacred" to the "secular." Personally, it seems to me that nothing could convince one of the sacredness of the secular as does the work which one endeavours to do among the troops. For instance, is it not in the realm of the sacred to secure shade and comfort for men who are ready to cry out with the excessive heat, or to provide writing material and reading matter so that they might be kept in touch with those home influences which mean so much in their lives, and so that their minds may be kept from dwelling on their present surroundings? There are many good people who would applaud one for speaking of the love and mercy of God to the crowded audiences one has the privilege of addressing, but would be not at all interested in seeing the speaker leave the platform and spend two hours serving out cups of lime-juice or cocoa to thirsty and tired soldiers. Yet which is the more sacred—to describe the Divine love, or to try in some small way to exhibit it?

At any rate, whether the task be sacred or secular, we

Digitized by Google

are endeavouring to make the lot of the soldiers somewhat less irksome than it would otherwise be. By Saturday concerts and Sunday services, by lectures, games, hymn-singing, and lantern entertainments, by providing food for body, mind, and soul, we are trying to minimize the undoubted temptations and hardships of summer campaigning in the Sahara. There is one other subject that I should like to mention, and that is the great pleasure experienced here in seeing the whole Church working as one. The chaplains here, and in most other places that I have heard of, have welcomed the advent of the Y.M.C.A., and the most cordial fellowship has existed between Y.M.C.A. representatives and the chaplains. In the preparation of this hut for the reception of the men, it was interesting to see the Presbyterian and the Roman Catholic chaplains hard at work with saw, hammer, and spade getting everything ship-shape. It was good also to take part in a service conducted by the Presbyterian and Anglican chaplains. On many Sundays this building begins as a Roman Catholic Cathedral, in the afternoon it is an Anglican or Presbyterian Church, while in the evening it usually becomes a Methodist Mission Hall. God grant that the war may have the effect of so uniting all Christians, that some day all those who love Him, of the East and of the West, shall be one, and that thus the world may believe what the angels sang some two thousand years ago.

KHARGA OASIS.—Upon Mr. MacDiarmid's departure in March 1917 for the Sudan, the Rev. J. C. Keyte, M.A., became secretary. He was a missionary from China, and came out under the auspices of the English National Council to spend his furlough on Y.M.C.A. work. In this oasis there were three sets of centres, many miles apart. When Mr. Keyte left, a secretary occasionally visited a centre that was left; but as the troops were withdrawn, the Y.M.C.A. hut closed down.

FAYOUM.—In the Fayoum a great deal of work was done by the Rev. A. H. Griffiths of England, who opened up work in the Fayoum in February 1916, and left with the Brigade he had been attached to in December 1916.

Digitized by Google

At one time he supervised seven centres. The following is his report on the work done in the Fayoum:

October 6, 1916.

The District comprises one base camp and six outpost camps (five on the Fayoum frontier and one in the Nile valley) besides various bridgeheads, depots, etc., manned by the Dismounted Yeomanry. There are normally three squadrons of Mounted Yeomanry, one of Dismounted Yeomanry, a battery of R.H.A., R.A.M.C. hospital and staff, A.V.C., and M.M.G. etc., at the Base Camp, and one Squadron (besides M.M.G. and Camel Corps) at each outpost camp. The troops are so disposed that they have one month at the base camp and two at the outpost in rotation.

The Fayoum is not remarkably healthy, the water supply is most dangerous, and the life is monotonous in the extreme. At the base camp the old Y.M.C.A. tent, after being moved once, and blown down once, was replaced by a large Brigade Recreation Hut, put up by the R.E.'s, with seating accommodation for 900, and a large square platform for a boxing ring. At the back of the stage a mat drop curtain separates the hut from a small chapel built on to the side of the hut. Alongside the chapel I made use of the shredded remains of the Y.M.C.A. marquee to form a changing room for theatricals and boxing contests. The Y.M.C.A. provides the piano and half the seats and tables; also an incandescent lamp for the body of the hall, the stage being lit by electricity supplied by a motor in a wagon outside at the Brigade's expense.

The Y.M.C.A. Cinema has been greatly appreciated, shows being given two nights a week. Adjoining the hut, and between it and the Nile Cold Storage Dry Canteen, is a shelter with tubs of palms, etc. This remains lit up on cinema nights, so that men who wish to do so may read and write.

I have come to a clear financial understanding as to the division of expense between the Y.M.C.A. and the Brigade Recreation Fund as follows: The Y.M.C.A. provides piano, cinema, and half tables and forms for the hut, pays my messing and railway expenses, and half the native servant's wage. Other sundries as at any other Y.M.C.A. hut. The Brigade Recreation Fund pays half servant's wage, for weekly hire of cinema films, and for fortnightly

Digitized by Google

recharging of accumulator, prizes for boxing, etc., instruments for the band, etc.

As to the division of work and responsibility—here again it has been perfectly easy to come to a working agreement with the chaplains, and we have co-operated with enthusiasm. There has been no written or fixed contract in the matter, except that I am solely responsible for anything connected with the Y.M.C.A. and the chaplain has priority wherever it concerns Brigade Head-quarters, or where a personal knowledge of and contact with his men is entailed. Every Sunday at 1.30 a committee of sergeants and others (three from each unit) meets to decide the week's programme, and can always be trusted to go through and arrange details of entries for contests or items for concerts. I have been careful not to decide anything of importance without consulting this committee.

The breakdown of Chaplain Holmes and the illness of his successor Chaplain Allen have at times left me single-handed at the Base Camp. I have then taken the morning voluntary Parade Service and the more informal service in the evening. When a chaplain is present I take alternate addresses on Sunday evening, or go out to an outpost camp for the week-end, giving a show with a small cinema on Saturday and a service on Sunday evening. All the services are well attended, and the officers at the outpost camps have turned out splendidly, and have been most kind to me in every way.

A way of serving the men which I have found much appreciated is the taking of photographs (portraits and snapshots of the locality) and selling them at cost price. This means a considerable amount of work, and has to be carefully organized. I am extremely grateful to Mr. Barling for his patient assistance in this work. So much for the past.

For the future there is every prospect of a monotonous winter, and I am anxious that every outpost shall be equipped with the minimum of some kind of musical instrument, fifty library books, and six or eight games. I am appointing suitable men to act as Y.M.C.A. agents in each camp, who shall supervise all property; and in some camps where the Y.M.C.A. man is a theological student he is holding informal Sunday evening services in the Y.M. tent.

I also intend to buy at my own expense a mirroscope. It would be useful for showing my own photos and picture post

Digitized by Google

cards and pictures as illustrations for lectures, either by myself or one of the officers.

In summarizing the work of the Y.M.C.A. in this district, I should call it useful rather than ornamental. The men seem to feel it is *there* all the time, and various officers have spontaneously praised the work done by the Y.M.C.A. throughout Egypt, and expressed their satisfaction and even gratitude at its activities in the Fayoum. Of its unseen influence on the tone of the camps I have no doubt at all.

BAHARIA.—In the Baharia, the work was done by Mr. S. Greenhalgh and the Rev. A. C. Dixon. The travelling in the Baharia was extensive and severe, as the following extract from a report by the latter will show:

The oasis is best described by imagining Loch Lomond to have been drained of water ages ago, the island rising as sharp-outlined hills from the sandy bed, while here and there, some miles apart, a few persistent springs maintain a little verdure and native cultivation.

Our route lay down a gap where the sports were held, past the well of Harah, through the defile of water-riven hills, past the ruins of a possibly fifth-century Christian church and other buildings, thought to be the place of a Roman Bishop's exile, on to the little patch of cultivation at the foot of Gebel Mendisha, a long-since extinct volcano, high up in the weird basalt crater of which the Australian troops had a garrison camp. Here we arrived in the late afternoon, and, after a meal and a rest, fixed the lantern sheet against a wall of tibbin (compressed camel food), and under the wonderful starlight told those sons of Empire from the Antipodes something of the marvellous history of Egypt and the Nile valley, which they had come into the grim desert to guard. Next morning, getting the use of a camel, I went over to Siwa gate, the farthest outpost westward on the Senussi trail, where a little group of Australians kept an important but very lonely vigil. After having my lunch with them and giving them the magazines, stationery, etc., from my saddle bag, I explained that I was a sky-pilot, and passed round some hymn books, and out there in the listening silences

Digitized by Google

we had a little time of praise and prayer. Undertaking to execute some little commissions for them, I returned to the Mendisha camp, and opened the little Y.M.C.A. "shop" in the officers' mess and the stock was cleared off in less than an hour. That evening we gave the fellows another lantern show, the M.O. proving himself an expert lanternist. The subject this time was *The Pilgrim's Progress*, and was listened to with rapt attention, not only by our colonial troops, but by the natives of the Egyptian Labour Corps, who were sitting behind them on the sand, and who, if they could not follow the address, may have grasped something of the meaning of Bunyan's matchless allegory.

Requests came by wireless from other outlying camps for similar help, which we met as far as opportunity allowed; but meantime the heat was increasing and the white troops were being replaced by Bikaner Indians—a very fine type, both as men and as soldiers—and our Cairo Committee asked me to go farther up-country to the Kharga Oasis, where Y.M.C.A. work had been already commenced by Mr. MacDiarmid, a fine New Zealander, and continued by the Rev. J. C. Keyte, a Baptist missionary spending his furlough thus, who had to return to Cairo. Markez-el-Sherika, the main camp in that oasis, is 340 kilometres almost due south from Legalit Gate, but to get there it was necessary for me to return to Maghagha in the Nile Valley, Blockhouse 6, where I arranged to leave the whole remainder of that district in my colleagues' care. Then up the Nile Valley to Mowaslet, and thence by the Western Oasis Railway to Sherika, a journey of some 700 miles' run, which took me four days to accomplish. But arriving there, I was welcomed by Mr. Keyte and introduced by him to the camp personnel, and to the mud hut under the shadow of the Mosque, in which fine red-triangle work had been carried on, before he went back, on the train's return journey to Cairo, civilization, and rest.

The northern portion of this area was first attended to, in January 1916, by Mr. E. A. Claxton, who remained in the district until July, and was followed by Mr. R. B. Foster (an American Rhodes scholar), who stayed until November, when Mr. Ralph White, another American secretary, took over the work and stayed until March

Digitized by Google

1917, when by arrangement with the Church Army the Y.M.C.A. withdrew. The work was very similar to the work of the Oases, but the climate and conditions were better.

WARDAN.—Wardan was a busy centre when the troops returned from the Dardanelles.

The list of the activities in Upper Egypt and the Oases would not be complete without a cordial reference to the work of the American Mission at Assiout. The American Mission still caters for the wants of the troops stationed in the Assiout district.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XI

1917

It will be remembered that the battle of Romani was fought in the middle of the summer of 1916, and was soon followed by an advance towards Palestine, with the development of the railway and the pipe line, and by the occupation of El Arish. From El Arish the advance was continued, the battles of Magdaba and Rafa were fought, and Gaza was reached about the end of the year. The first battle of Gaza was fought in April 1917; then there was a prolonged halt, and at the end of 1917 the victorious advance into Palestine commenced. Consequently during 1917 the Y.M.C.A. was faced with a new problem. As the advance took place, military units at the Canal and base moved forward, their camps practically disappeared, and the Y.M.C.A. had to continually accommodate itself to these new conditions. It was no longer a question of supplying huts in fixed positions, but of making adequate preparation for mobility.

By the end of 1917 there were 56 centres in operation. Of the 56 secretaries, 5 were American, 19 Australian, 2 New Zealanders, and 27 English, and the strength of this little force was not sufficient for the work in hand.

As the advance took place, the military authorities realized the importance of the Y.M.C.A. work, and frequently sent invitations to the Y.M.C.A. to establish a centre here or there, as the case may be. Some idea

Digitized by Google

of the severity of the work can be furnished from the following report from one of the secretaries:

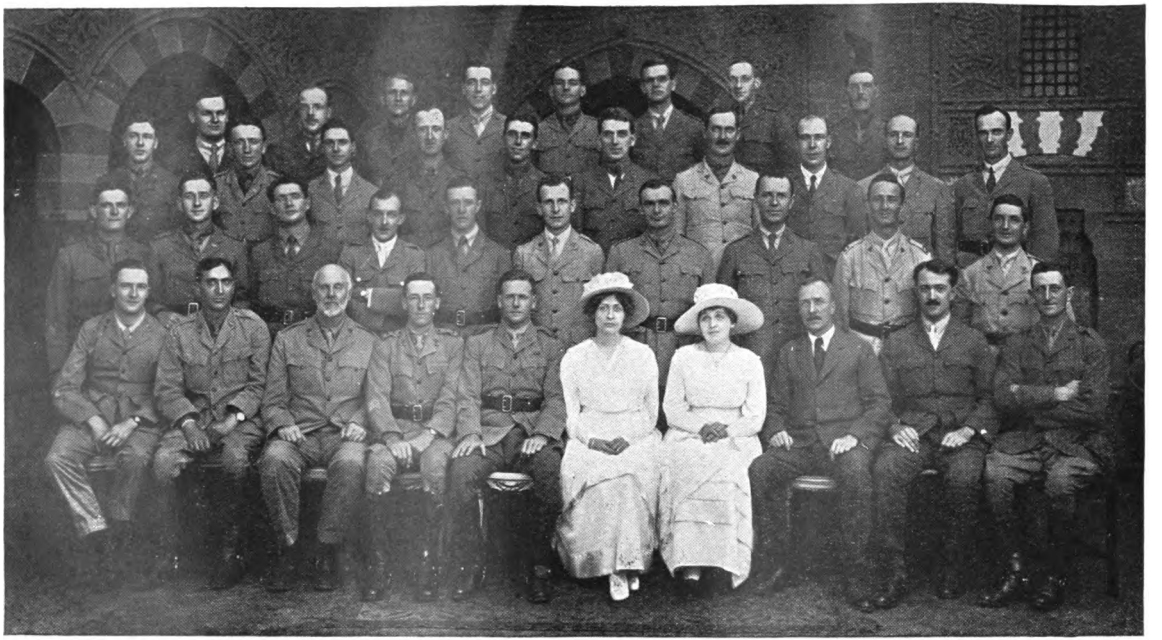
The position of Y.M.C.A. secretary at railhead is no sinecure. To go unperturbed through a fourteen-hour day of unloading, tent erecting, canteen arranging, instructing orderlies new to the work, supervising Fatigue parties, organizing voluntary working parties, interviewing various officials, and being interviewed by countless officers and others desirous to "see the manager," unable to stir a foot without some pathetic appeal being made, with not a moment to yourself, in an atmosphere of dust and heat, amid horses and camels, and queues literally hundreds of yards long of men waiting to be served, and with no chance of getting out of it until closing time. Then at the end of the day, having counted up takings, to curl up in blankets only to be summoned by the R.T.O. to unload trucks, and, in the absence of adequate help, to be at this until 4 a.m. and rise again for another dustful day at seven o'clock. To do all this without degenerating into a peevish invalid requires a sound basis of Christianity tempered with good health and made healthy by good temper. The added possibility of being bombed does not help the situation.

In Mr. Jessop's annual report he further points out that the French and Italian units were invited to join the Y.M.C.A. in various positions, and availed themselves of the invitation.

As regards the work at the base, the Club in Alexandria did well, as the following note shows:

In Alexandria the Central Branch was built two years ago as a counter attraction to the numberless low native cafés to which the men flocked, largely because there were so few decent, attractive places within their means. Nobly has it fulfilled its mission. It presents the usual attractions, including a canteen which is most popular. Last month from 1,000 to 4,500 eggs a day—63,000 in all—were sold, and anything up to 500 cups of drink, tea, cocoa, or lemonade, an hour at times.

Digitized by Google



Some Y.M.C.A. Secretaries and Workers.

Sitting: A. T. Keens (Eng.)—S. Bakkal (India)—Lord Radstock (Eng.)—R. R. Way (Aust.)—W. Owens (Aust.)—Mrs. Owens.—Miss Amis—W. Jessop (Cairo, General Secretary)—G. W. Shapley (Aust.)—P. M. Velvin (N.Z.)
First Row: A. J. Gibbs (Aust.)—R. J. Howie (Aust.)—F. H. Druery (Aust.)—H. J. Towner (Eng.)—J. G. Robertson (Aust.)—C. A. Northway (Eng.)—W. Adams (Aust.)—H. V. Smart (Aust.)—A. G. Robertson (Aust.)—A. Cameron (Aust.)
Second Row: S. N. Barling (Eng.)—A. L. Anderson (Aust.)—H. Darvill (Eng.)—S. Greenhalgh (Eng.)—C. W. J. Harbridge (Eng.)—H. Handley (Eng.)—W. A. Hutchinson (Aust.)—B. Pickford (Eng.)—A. Gillies (N.Z.)—E. H. MacDonald (Aust.)
Top Row: V. A. Rule (N.Z.)—J. Hanson (Eng.)—A. A. Hainsworth (U.S.A.)—E. F. Pester (Eng.)—T. E. Jones (Aust.)—H. Crouch (Aust.)—R. Twigg (Eng.)—H. E. Grainger (N.Z.)

To face page 116]

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

The Garden Court, where good cinema shows are given every night, keeps big crowds entertained. Then there are the weekly Bible class, Christian Endeavour, and Sunday evening services. Bands of men are organized to invite soldiers to the service, also volunteers are doing good work in the hospitals.

The successful career of the Esbekieh Club continued :

In Cairo, the Esbekieh Gardens Club, opened in August 1915, and the Anzac Y.M.C.A. Hostel, opened in March 1916, are the two great association centres. During the year from May 1916 to May 1917 there has been an average daily attendance at Esbekieh of 1,600. In addition to general work and a few regular routine attractions such as roller skating, billiards, etc., there has been at least one special event every evening and in some evenings two. These have included concerts, plays, lectures, skating matches, etc., and on Sunday afternoon strangers' free teas, and on Sunday evenings a special series of splendid evangelistic addresses well attended. In addition to these, nine extra specials were arranged at which alone there were not less than 27,000 men present.

Sports are one of the special features there. Rink hockey and other matches are held, and any game new to one nationality is put in as an attraction. Many chess and draught matches have been played with much interest.

The café at this centre is a great feature, and is patronized in a week by thousands of men, who will pass many another on the way to be served at this one. During the month of July 6,000 cakes were sold here, and cups of tea innumerable.

Only light refreshments are served. The place closes at 10 p.m., but at the Anzac Y.M.C.A. Hostel a man may have bed and full board, shaves, hot baths—in fact, it is a first-class hotel for the men in the ranks. Ordinarily its full capacity is supposed to be 350 beds, which means using the roof. For the year ending August 24 the total number of beds used was 53,502 and the total number of meals served was 313,375 (daily average 859). Letters posted in that time, 73,000. Practically all the guests are transients and remain only from one to four nights. The price of a bed is ordinarily pt. 5 ; breakfast, pt. 5 ; lunch (three courses), pt. 7 ; or cold, pt. 5 ; dinner (three courses), pt. 7.

Digitized by Google

And with reference to the success of the Anzac Hostel:

During this summer men have been given leave to Cairo and Alexandria from the Palestine front, and hundreds crowd in to both cities, especially the former. In consequence "Anzac" has been packed. During the month of August a nightly average sleeping there was 550—in all 17,050. The record night was last Tuesday, when 700 used the building. They were lying everywhere. This was only possible by placing a tent holding 100 beds on a vacant lot close by and by using the floor of the auditorium. It was interesting and pathetic last Saturday night, after a concert at which a thousand men were present, to see mattresses rushed in and laid upon every available foot of space in that big hall for men who had nowhere else to go. All beds in the hostel are free to men on leave, if they take their meals in the café. These meals cost 17 piastres per day. During the month 58,733 meals were served—daily average, 1,894. For breakfast they had bread-and-butter, choice of tea, coffee, or cocoa, and choice of bacon and eggs, sausage, or fish cakes. For lunch and dinners soup, choice of two meats, vegetables, and pudding, with bread-and-butter for former, and bread for latter.

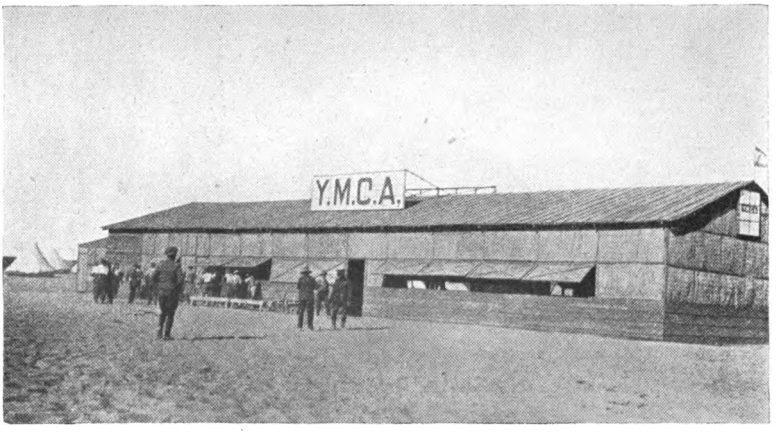
Any abrasion of the skin goes septic very quickly in this country, and many of the men on leave have septic sores. About forty dressings a day have been given in the dispensary at Anzac in the past month.

Every wife and mother in the British Isles and Australia should be grateful for this place. At the end of the first three months of its existence, with conditions in Cairo exactly what they have been before it was opened, except that the men had a clean place within their means in which to eat and sleep, the numbers at the Dermatological Hospital had dropped from 2,200 to 700.

A very important step was taken this year, in the permission that was given to commence work amongst the Indians:

"After many requests and much waiting, at last

Digitized by Google



TYPICAL Y.M.C.A. CANAL HUT.

TYPICAL Y.M.C.A. MARQUEE, CANAL RAILHEAD.

To face page 118]

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

permission was given to begin work among the Indians, and the first Indian secretary arrived about two months ago. Before that an English secretary did what he could for them, but of course was severely handicapped by not knowing their language. If we are to do any serious telling work, more Indian secretaries must be forthcoming. There is a very great need for such work, and it is much appreciated by the men."

During this year another development took place. By arrangement with the military authorities an attempt was made at one of the convalescent depots to provide men with organized play; that is, men who had recovered up to a certain point wanted occupation and wanted systematic exercise. A number of games were developed under the direction of the Y.M.C.A. secretary. They were successful up to a point, but those who knew the United States felt they would be very much more useful if the whole movement were under the direction of a properly trained physical director, and the Y.M.C.A. decided, with the permission of the military authorities, to introduce a graduate of the Springfield College. It followed that Dr. Gilbert Deaver, M.D., B.P.E., a graduate of the University of Pennsylvania, and also a Bachelor of Physical Education in the Springfield College, Massachusetts, volunteered and soon reached Egypt. The place and problem of physical education will be discussed in a separate chapter.

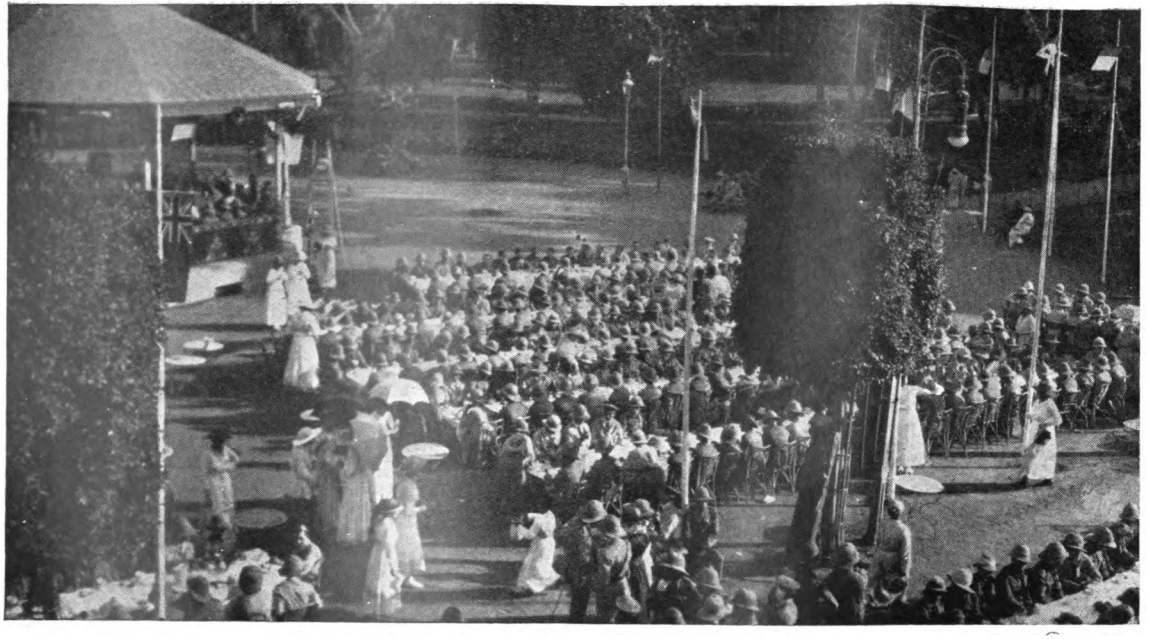
During this year a unique event took place. The High Commissioner for Egypt, Sir Reginald Wingate, who had succeeded Sir Henry MacMahon, determined to visit the Esbekieh Soldiers' Club and see the work for himself. He fixed May 12 as the day for doing so,

Digitized by Google

and it was decided to entertain all the convalescents in Cairo in honour of the occasion. The civilian authorities placed the entire gardens at the disposal of the Y.M.C.A., all civilians being excluded. At 2.30 p.m. the men began to arrive, and by 3.30 p.m. 3,000 men were enjoying the sports and amusements arranged by the committee in charge. Seating accommodation was provided at tea for 3,000, each table accommodating fifty men, and being cared for by two ladies. Some idea of the magnitude of the undertaking can be gauged by the fact that 17,600 cakes, 13,400 slices of bread-and-butter, 53 lb. of dry tea, 282 lb. of sugar, and 212 lb. of butter were used. After tea a concert was given by the Lena Ashwell Concert Party, who did so much for Egypt. The High Commissioner gave a short address to the men in which he referred to the work done by the Y.M.C.A. with the troops in Egypt, and the entertainment terminated in the same excellent order in which it had begun.

At the beginning of this year, owing to the mobile military arrangements east of the Canal, secretaries were attached to Mounted Brigades for the first time as a matter of policy, and during the battles of 1917 the Y.M.C.A. secretaries were organized in giving comforts and help to the wounded. The Y.M.C.A. always accompanied the railhead as it pushed forward into the desert, and were sometimes in advance of the railhead. When the movement came to an end, and the troops were entrenched before Gaza, then the Y.M.C.A. spread out, and went to the front line in a series of dug-outs; also at all the important stations along the line from Kantara to the railhead—Deir-el-Belah—the Y.M.C.A. established large centres, providing several marquees at each place to serve both officers and men. Near-by

Digitized by Google



CONVALESCENT TEA, ESBEKIEH.

To face page 120]

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

the station at Deir-el-Belah four small dug-outs acted as Field Head-quarters, which had been transferred from Ismailia. Also near-by the military allowed one large marquee to be erected, although within range of the enemy's guns, and this was of great value during this period. On the arrival of the special troop trains, the men were supplied with free cocoa and cake. As has been stated, however, from this point the Y.M.C.A. spread out like a fan, serving the infantry in dug-outs, and having secretaries attached to the mounted brigades. The movements of the latter were swift and sudden, and sometimes the Association centres consisted of a bell tent and a small dump of stores.

It was the aim of the Y.M.C.A. to have a dug-out established with each brigade, and though this scheme was almost carried into effect, yet it suffered somewhat from lack of Secretaries. At this time one Secretary had to supervise the three dug-outs with a division—a task which was almost impossible. As long as supplies lasted, the usual canteen goods supplied by the Trading Department were sold, and during the whole of this summer free lime-juice was given to all comers during the day, and, if practicable, cocoa at night.

The approximate position before the advance of 1917 is given in Appendix IV.

One of the features of the Red Cross work in the cities was the arrangement of outings for convalescents. This was undertaken by an Outings Committee composed of representatives of the Red Cross and the Y.M.C.A., but sometimes, owing to the magnitude of the undertaking, the Y.M.C.A. was required to make the necessary arrangements. One outing arranged by the Y.M.C.A. doing this work, at Nuzha Gardens, Alexandria, was attended by the High Commissioner, Sir Reginald Wingate.

Digitized by Google

The following account of this entertainment is taken from *The Egyptian Gazette*:

The High Commissioner on Saturday last was present with Lady Wingate at the Y.M.C.A. Convalescent Outings Fête at Nuzha Gardens, Alexandria.

His Excellency delivered the following speech to the large company present:

Dr. Granville and members of the Y.M.C.A. Committee,—When I had the honour of becoming your patron in Egypt six months ago, your popular Cairo Secretary, Mr. Jessop, handed me some papers connected with the Institution which has done such splendid work throughout the Army, and which has enabled 2,000 convalescent soldiers to enjoy an outing to-day in these very beautiful gardens, generously placed at their disposal by the Municipality of Alexandria, and of which they and their able Garden Superintendent, Mr. Montefront, are so justly proud. These papers gave an account of the work that the Y.M.C.A. has been doing in connection with the war, and I cannot do better than quote Mr. Jessop's words: "One thing the Government does not do for the soldier is to provide for the social side of his make-up. The first consideration is to turn out a well-trained and physically fit fighting machine. But experience has shown that unless his leisure is also provided for, he is apt to go stale, and his efficiency becomes greatly impaired. It is here the Y.M.C.A. stepped in, and without waiting to be asked set about providing necessary huts that have become so popular in the camps and wherever the troops are."

Take the town and environments of Alexandria alone, and see what this great humanitarian organization has achieved since the war began. We have the central building at Alexandria, erected on land generously ceded by the Municipality, together with a garden court. This affords facilities for reading and writing, it is always full, and as many as 800 meals are served in a day. Some kind of entertainment is, I understand, given every night, such as bands, concerts, lectures, French classes of instruction, religious services or social evenings, and on four evenings in the week there is a cinema show in the gardens. I am sure that you will all agree in taking this occasion to give a hearty vote of thanks to Miss Frearson, who, with

Digitized by Google

her staff of Armenian refugees, is in charge of the kitchens, as well as to Messrs. S. and H. Crouch, whose work has been admirable. At Mustapha the Y.M.C.A. hut is in the charge of the Rev. Dr. Kennedy, who has done excellent service, whilst Mex is looked after by the Rev. Terry. In this remote part of the town the Y.M.C.A. hut is of very special value. I am glad that a start is being made at the Royal Flying School at Abukir.

Nine Centres in Alexandria

Altogether since September 1915 nine centres will have been opened in and about Alexandria, viz. Mustapha, Mex, Central Building, Cleopatra, Zaharia, three at Sidi Bishr including the Rest Camp (where the work of the American Mission was most valuable), and at Abukir. An offshoot at Mersa Matruh has also been working in a distant spot for the last fifteen months. And so the work goes on and the workers, with no thought of reward or military recognition, are steadily doing their bit. I am sure that in acting as your spokesman to-day, I can offer them, on behalf of one and all of you whom I am now addressing, an expression of your heartfelt appreciation of all they have done and are doing to give you "A Home from Home" in this historic land of Egypt, where so many of you men are bearing honourable scars gained on its battle-fields, and of which you may well be proud. You have one and all rendered grand service to our King and Empire and are, I know, ready to carry on to the end—led—as you always will be—by leaders of the right sort, who may say "come on" but never "go on." Men such as you have shown that you can go fearlessly forward to victory or death—death must come one day to all, but it has no terrors for the man who feels that he is doing his duty.

> "Conquer we shall, but we must persistently contend,
> 'Tis not the fight that crowns us, but the end."

We are making, and will be called upon to make, heavy sacrifices in the cause we hold so dear, namely, the battle of liberty for the smaller nations, and, as Mr. Lloyd George said in his great speech at Glasgow a week ago, for the "emancipation of mankind." Our enemies were convinced that we were a degenerate race, and would remain idle while they carried out their attempt to dominate the world; but what has been the

Digitized by Google

result as far as our Empire is concerned—of this three years of war?

I will reply by quoting from an article by a well-known German professor in a newspaper published in Berlin on the 23rd of last month. "The internal solidarity of the English world Empire," he says, "has been strengthened by the war; in spite of all German theories of the imminent decay of the English world Empire, its internal relations have become closer. Canadians, Australians, Boers, Indians, white and coloured Colonials are bleeding for the Empire on a scale unheard of in English history. Blood, however, is the best binding material." Such are the views of one of our "thinking" enemies, and they are not far from the truth. Britain is true to herself, and, what is more important still, she has been and will be true to her Ideals, and every day we are throwing our weight more fully into the scales as our resources become better organized.

May I remind you of the words of the Empire poet with which probably many of you are familiar, and which are somewhat appropriate to an occasion like this:

"Never the lotus closes, never the wild-fowl wake,
But a soul goes out on the east wind that died for Britain's sake,
Man or woman or suckling, mother or bride or maid,
Because on the bones of the British the British Flag is stayed."

I should like you all now to rise and join me in giving three hearty cheers for Dr. Granville, the Committee, and its able secretary, Mr. Crouch, who have so admirably organized this delightful entertainment as well as the various concert-parties, bands, etc., which have contributed so much to our pleasure and enjoyment, and, last but not least, for "The ladies, God bless 'em," who have so whole-heartedly devoted themselves to administering to our creature comforts, and I think I can say without any fear of contradiction that we have never enjoyed a tea more at their fair hands.

During the year a most extensive piece of work was undertaken in Port Said. With special funds from Australia, and by arrangement with the Australian military authorities, the Y.M.C.A. erected a rest camp, which provided 700 iron beds and messing huts for 700

Digitized by Google

men, with the usual social and recreational advantages. The work was under the charge of Mr. W. A. Hutchinson, one of the Australian secretaries, from Perth, and has been phenomenally successful.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XII

WORK AMONGST THE INDIAN TROOPS

It was stated that during 1917 permission was given to undertake Y.M.C.A. work on behalf of the Indian troops. With the reorganization of the Egyptian Expeditionary Force after entry into Palestine, large numbers of Indian troops again entered Egypt, and the Y.M.C.A. undertook work for them on exactly the same lines as the work done for Europeans, except that no religious exercises or addresses of any description were given to them. The work has been limited to providing the social advantages, the canteen, and incidentally other personal advantages which are supplied to British European soldiers. There are a certain number of Indian Secretaries, but there are European Secretaries as well. The Indian Secretaries are Christian, but they necessarily refrain from any form of religious address. As more Indian Secretaries arrived, the work enlarged greatly.

The following report from Mr. S. C. L. Nasir, furnished on July 29, 1918, tells the story in the words of an Indian Secretary:

When the last brief report was issued about nine months ago a hope was expressed that the coming months would see a great advance in our work. This hope has been more than fulfilled. Last November, when the Report was written, we had only two Indian Secretaries, one of whom was looking after the Base Camp and the Hospitals at Suez, while the other was carrying on as

Digitized by Google

best he could up at the front line in Palestine. But even at that period—when things were being worked on a small scale—signs were not wanting that our activities would soon assume bigger proportions This came to pass in an unexpected way. Up to December this country had only a small proportion of Indian Expeditionary Force, for whom about six Secretaries could cater acceptably. However, after that month, the Indian troops began to pour in rapidly from all directions, and the energies of those engaged in the Indian work were taxed up to their utmost capacity. Not being prepared for such an emergency a stock of our available resources had to be taken and adjustments made. A large order for equipment was at once dispatched to India, part of which has already arrived in the country, and another big consignment is expected shortly. As regards the workers—the Secretary up the line began to have more than his share of the work. His valuable work in Jerusalem as guide, philosopher, and friend of the Indian sepoys visiting the Holy City was much appreciated by the men and the high British officials. The writer believes that a separate report of the Indian work in Palestine has been—or will be—prepared by the Secretary concerned, who has a very interesting story to tell regarding his experience, work, and adventures. Here is an extract from one of his periodical letters which may be taken as the type of work being done by him :

"I am still continuing serving at the front line east of the Jordan at the foot of the hills of Moab. Units keep changing all the time, but I stop where I am.

"It's a very thirsty country, but I am able to get a large supply of drinking water filled every morning in my tanks, and manage to get enough money to have free lime-juice drinks for both Indians and others going all day, and in the evening cocoa free to all who turn up. Yesterday there were 2,000 drinks served—about 1,300 to Indians and 700 to Britishers ; 390 mugs of cocoa, 150 to Indians and 240 to others.

"Letter writing among the Indians goes on as briskly as it used to at Marseilles, and Britishers, Indians, and others more than comrades in arms—as brothers—can be seen flocking my 'Rush Y.M.' as the boys call it, writing letters at all hours. Yesterday 1,000 sheets of writing paper were given away—700 plain sheets to Indians and 300 Y.M. sheets to others. Every week I have to send from 30 to 100 orders to Cairo for all sorts

Digitized by Google

of things for the men—from repairs to old watches to the buying of new coloured handkerchiefs; and once a fortnight, when I go to Jerusalem on duty for a night, I've to buy and carry back about £100 worth of stuff for the boys.

"The chief commodities sold in my canteen are—sugar, milk, fruit, cigarettes, lime-juice, soap, biscuits, cakes, fish in tins, toffee, chocolate, green peas, and, you may be interested to know, fishing tackle and hooks. Either a gramophone or a harmonium is used almost the whole day, except during an evening bombardment, when it is necessary to listen to which way the shells are flying and whistling. The other day we were serving in the canteen (three orderlies and myself) while five shells exploded within 50 yards of us, and we ducked behind the boxes every time. Nobody was hit, but there was a lot of shrapnel and pieces of shell all over. I am still 'preserving' out of them. We have never, so far, been directly hit, except with a few 'duds,' which got buried as they came without explosion.

"The discomforts are very great, but mind you I am not grumbling. I have seemingly forgotten the taste of salt, and have not tasted it for the last two months now. I live on jam, brick biscuits, tinned stuff, and have no means of geting my food cooked. The heat is oppressive, and the whole country is pested with mosquitoes, flies, snakes, scorpions, sandflies, centipedes, and crawling things of every description.

"It is nice to meet friends from France, where I had the privilege of serving them, and it is a great pleasure to me again of serving them in this God-forsaken country. They are all filled with all sorts of appreciative stories about the Y.M.C.A. in France, and what it has done for them. It was a surprise to them to find us here, and so far up. Lime-juice, sugar, milk, cigarettes, and biscuits are in chief demand, and I think it worth my while to make four trips a week into Jericho (about eight miles) on a limber or on foot to keep my place well supplied from whatever source I can. 'Go to Jericho' is no pleasure trip or joy-ride on a limber over shell holes, and only men out here can realize what it means, and appreciate what is being attempted to make them happier.

"In Jerusalem, Indian work is not going on as I should like it to, on account of my being tied to my unit here, as there is nobody then to carry on. Indian work is increasing every day, and to-day there is heaps to do for another dozen Indian secre-

Digitized by Google

taries. Each brigade wants one secretary with them, and several brigades have been requesting us now for two months. Some of the chaplains have been friendly, and I am helping them with hymn-books, furniture, etc., for holding sing-song and service for Britishers on Sundays.

"The other day I got Professor Browne of Princeton—now in Y.M.C.A.—to lecture on 'America and the War,' and the men liked the talk very much. We had the lecture on a hill-side facing the Jordan, w ile star-shells were bursting behind us and providing us with light."

The other Indian Secretary, during the spring months, was transferred from Suez and attached to the cavalry base at T—— temporarily, and afterwards he moved with the Base to their new and relatively permanent quarters at K——. More about this place will be said later. Meanwhile the work at T—— has been maintained, for it is still an Indian camp of some importance, and an old hut, once built for the Australians, has been renovated and suitably furnished for the Indian work. The man in charge of the work is an old missionary gentleman, who was with the Indians when in France. He has recently arrived in the country, and is proving of very great service to the Indian troops.

Our meagre staff has also been strengthened by the welcome addition of two more Secretaries, one an Indian who was on his way to France, who very wisely decided to stay a while with us and help the Indian work get started in one or two new places. After being at T—— for a period of weeks, he has now taken charge of the Indian Leave Camp at I——. This is a small camp overlooking some lakes. The locality is beautiful, but the barrenness round about it makes it rather a desolate place, the more so as the town is about three miles away. Our Y.M.C.A. marquee is the only place where men have any opportunity of recreation and amusement. Needless to say, the place is greatly used by the men, and greatly appreciated, and this is our justification for keeping an experienced worker in a small centre like this. It does advertise our show all through the Forces, for fresh parties arrive every week, and take away with them happy memories of time well spent in the well-known red marquees.

The other Secretary, who is non-Indian, has been sent up the line to help forward our work there. We have news of a few more workers coming, and one can only hope they will be here soon. The need was never greater; and the opportunities are

Digitized by Google

enormous. We have come to a stage in the official circles where the Indian Association work is looked upon with sympathy, and great facilities are afforded us in many ways. The appreciation of our efforts by both the Indian men and their officers is very encouraging. Indeed we are working mostly among people who have seen our work in France and Mesopotamia, and it is a triumph for the cause of the Association when these men feel that we stand for their friendship and service in every battle-front. Our small canteens of the usual dry goods are filling a long-felt want, and not infrequently hungry stomachs are a means of leading men to higher things.

X., which has been mentioned before, is probably the biggest Indian camp. We have two canteens running here—one in the Infantry Base and the other in the Cavalry Base. In both these places big marquees are being used, although a pucca Association hut will be soon erected in the former camp. Our everyday activities consist of running a canteen gramophone recitals, indoor and outdoor games, concerts, and shows. Recently an Indian drama, staged in our marquee, was pronounced a great success. There is a talk of taking a concert party up the line. As can be readily imagined, the Secretary in charge has a very busy time, for besides the usual routine of hut work, he is called upon to do odd work for his men, such as doing their English correspondence, changing their money, writing legal petitions, acting as interpreter, reading out the day's news, and in some cases his advice is sought in private family matters. With a little sympathy, the Indian sepoy soon begins to confide his troubles. Indeed, the Secretary told me that his best work was done in a private little tent where the sepoys come to visit him. He also told me of another incident: Some time ago a large sum of money—running into several thousand of rupees—was brought to the Secretary to be changed into the currency of the country. No receipt for this was asked, and the man even did not give his own name. When the Secretary jokingly remarked, "What if I go away with all this money?" the man promptly replied: "Well, if there was the slightest fear of such a thing happening, we wouldn't have come to you." They know the Y.M. is all right It is amazing to what extent the sepoy would trust and respect a Secretary. This, I believe, is equally true of the Indian work in France and "Mespot."

Although something is being done at K——, in the opinion

Digitized by Google

of the writer it is not quite enough. K—— needs at least one—if not two—more Secretaries to do full justice to the requirements of the men in this area. For instance, there are three big Indian hospitals there, *and we have not touched them yet.* It doesn't need emphasizing that some of our best work has been—and is being—done in the hospitals, but we are seriously handicapped on account of the shortage of workers. We have also not been able to look after the Indian officers as much as we should have. Some of them are very great friends and admirers of the Association, and their friendliness and sage counsel have been of great value in many cases. The proposed pucca hut will have a separate recreation room for them, and it is hoped that this arrangement will afford better opportunities of service to the Secretary.

Another thing which it will not be out of place to mention here is the recent proposal of the military authorities to open a few wayside refreshment rooms for Indian troops passing through certain stations. The scheme is to be carried out by the Y.M.C.A. with the help of the authorities. Preliminary arrangements are now well under way to start these places, and it is confidently expected that these resting-places will prove of great service to the Indian troops in obtaining light refreshments while resting between changing trains, and getting such information as they require in a new place.

Those who read these lines will realize the urgency of our need, "The done little and the undone vast." Perhaps those who read this in India will put forth a greater endeavour to come forward themselves or help others to come out. The harvest is ripe, but the labourers are few.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XIII

1918

THE beginning of 1918 saw the entry into Jerusalem, and with this enormous advance the nature of the front shifted, the positions of units in the Lines of Communication altered, and with these changes came of course a complete alteration of the disposition of the Y.M.C.A. units, who necessarily follow the troops.

During the fighting, the Y.M.C.A. was entrusted by the medical authorities with an unusual piece of work. A number of the walking cases and the light cases of wounded were passed down, and provision was made at certain points that the Y.M.C.A. should be ready with light refreshments on a large scale, should have a sufficient personnel available, and should see that the men's wants were attended to. The work was well thought out and arranged, and went without a hitch. The following report from Mr. Owens, who was in charge of these arrangements, indicates the enthusiasm with which the work was undertaken:

To keep the fit man fit in every respect has been one of the main aims towards which the Y.M.C.A. has directed all its energies in every part of the war theatre.

Two months before the Palestine advance, which ended in the capture of Jaffa and Jerusalem, the Y.M.C.A. was asked by General Military Head-quarters to depart, for a time, from this principle and to concentrate all its strength in the forthcoming

Digitized by Google

Push upon caring for the *unfit* man—wounded and for the time being physically "down and out."

In the time of waiting and preparation, in the days of marching and trekking along the old Jerusalem road out of Egypt into Palestine—that "long long trail awinding" across the scorching sands of Sinai into the waste plains of the Promised Land—the Y.M. had stood by the boys; and now when opportunity came of being present to serve them in "the day of battle," not hesitating, it sprang to the task.

The Y.M.C.A. felt honoured at the duty assigned to them, and considered that this would be their definite contribution to any advance that might take place. Many difficulties in the way of organization had to be faced: (1) It was impossible to gauge the number of wounded that had to be catered for. (2) For military reasons the date of the fight could not be disclosed. (3) It was difficult to know at exactly what parts of the field we would be most needed.

Notwithstanding, the work of preparation commenced. It was proposed to locate the Red Triangle men at every Casualty Clearing Station, and in the front-line area, and on the lines of communication, along which the men would travel to the base hospitals. Arrangements were made to have biscuits, cocoa, cake, milk, sugar, cigarettes, chocolate, matches, sandwiches, daily papers, firewood, boilers, urns, etc., at suitable points when needed, and on the eve of the fight they were rushed up into position.

When the first wounded troops came off the field into the clearing stations, 30 Y.M. men with 60 detailed soldiers were at their respective posts ready to serve them. When these same wounded men passed down the long lines of communication, they were served again by the ubiquitous Y.M. men with the same ubiquitous menu.

Altogether the amount given away was as follows: 112,761 cups of cocoa; 105,552 packets of biscuits; 51,050 pieces of cake; 42,875 packets of cigarettes; 23,720 bars of chocolate; besides matches, newspapers, and sandwiches,—the total cost amounting to £1,600.

A description of the service rendered is given by a Y.M.C.A. Secretary, who writes as follows:

"Our man-power was concentrated on the feeding of the wounded as they came off the field to the C.C.S.'s, and as they

Digitized by Google

journeyed down the line. We erected a marquee and equipped it with tables, forms, deck chairs, reading and writing materials, and games for the *walking wounded*. As they were not allowed to smoke in their wards, here they flocked to have their smoke.

"The O.C. placed at our disposal three hospital marquees. Each man was carried from the ambulance waggons to our tents, and we gave him a good refreshing drink of hot cocoa, with cake, biscuits, and cigarettes. Time and again the O.C., as well as other medical officers, congratulated us on our work and its value from the medical point of view. But even had we not had this professional testimony, any man who witnessed it could not have failed to see its value. Throughout the whole advance, this work was carried on, until the last wounded man had passed through. The medical officer in charge of all the arrangements for the wounded wrote: 'The Y.M.C.A. secretaries have been extraordinarily helpful to me.'"

Concerning these activities the following letter was received:

"HEAD-QUARTERS, PALESTINE L. OF C.
"*January* 29, 1918.

"DEAR MR. OWENS,

"I should like to express to you and your staff of workers my very great appreciation of the help you afforded me during the strenuous period of the recent advance. I have personal experience of the untiring energy, by night as well as by day, displayed by your workers in the advanced areas with the C.C.S.'s and also of the arrangements made along the L. of C. at the various halts for troops, trucks, trains. Everything went off without a hitch, and the additional comforts supplied by your organization, supplementing the A.S.C., seem to have been the added touch necessary to make a finished whole. It was a difficult thing we asked your organization to do, and they came out of it with every possible credit to themselves, and profit to us. With renewed appreciation, and the hope that

Digitized by Google

we may have the benefit of your help again in the near future,

"Believe me,
"Yours very faithfully,
"(*Signed*) J. J. ABRAHAM,
"*Lieut.-Colonel, A.D.M.S. Palestine L. of C.*"

After the break through at Gaza and beyond, the Y.M.C.A. established centres at all halting places, which, however, were soon closed up again as the troops pushed on to the north of Jaffa and Jerusalem. In the former place the German Consulate and also the large cinema hall were handed over to the Y.M.C.A., who also took over the management of Jaffa Hotel for officers. In Jerusalem a large building was taken for a hostel, and an adjoining hall was fitted with a cinema and used for social and religious activities. New houses have been taken in each place for headquarters and offices. The Secretaries are still attached to the Mounted Brigades and Infantry Divisions, buildings, marquees, and dug-outs being used.

The following report from Mr. Griffiths, who was attached to one of the Mounted Brigades, gives some indication of the nature of the activities and the attitude of an enthusiastic worker:

If I had to describe my work in one word it would be "canteen." My main object has been to supply the men with something to supplement their extremely monotonous rations. As it was quite unusual for me to work with a marquee (for at least eight months I was without one and in fact had no equipment but what I could carry on my horse), and as the Brigade, being mounted, was liable to be on the move at very short notice, I had to devise means by which stores could be brought to the men without risk of loss to the Y.M.C.A. As they are not the usual methods adopted it may be worth while to record them. I encouraged

Digitized by Google

each unit within the Brigade to run its own canteen with an officer in charge, and men told off to act as managers. In the case of one regiment whose officers were shy of the venture, I acted as buyer for them at the Army Canteen until the affair was well set going. I also ran, with voluntary help, the R.A.M.C. Canteen for a few months, but finally handed that over to their own care. The Y.M.C.A. supply was never greater than the demand, though when the Army Canteen was accessible as well, which was not very often, the Brigade did quite well.

Whenever there were goods available for me at railhead, I divided the total stock at my disposal among the five canteens of the Brigade, according to the ration strength of each unit, issued invoices, and they would transport their own share under my supervision.

The advantage of this method was obvious. It relieved me at once of all responsibility for the goods and of the fear of being stranded with unsold stock in the event of a move, each unit taking the goods on the understanding that I should not be expected to take anything back on the camp field, though I always allowed on any goods returned to a Y.M.C.A. Store Tent, and it set me free to keep in touch with the men and also to find out at once when stores would be available. The men appreciated the system because it ensured the goods being evenly distributed through every section of the Brigade; a squadron out on patrol could be sure of not losing their share through its being sold out to those off duty. The camps always being very scattered as a defence against air raids, the existence of "branch shops" was found very convenient.

The only things I myself have sold in retail have been photographs, snaps of localities in which the Brigade have seen service, and also groups and portraits of the men themselves. From small beginnings this became a big business, and took up a lot of my time. In November I took forty-five groups of troops and 3,500 prints were wanted to send home for Christmas.

In this twelve months between twenty and thirty thousand prints have been distributed. I was careful not to make money on t' em, as it would have spoilt the spirit of the whole affair. I sold the prints at the cost of printing, and relied on the discount for quantity to meet losses and expenses. I felt this was not only a service to the men, but also to their people at home. It certainly seemed to meet a long-felt want.

Digitized by Google

A Dug-out in Front Line with 54th Division.

A Dug-out in Front Line.

To face page 136]

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

The only times when "religious work" in the stereotyped sense of "meetings" was possible were during the short periods when I could set up a marquee. The military authorities would only allow this to be done at such times as the Brigade was withdrawn for rest, either on the beach or well behind the lines. The Brigade chaplain (C. of E.) used to take services alternately with me, and there was never anything but the most cordial relationship and perfect understanding between us. The form of service used by the Padre was such as would meet the need of members of any denomination, and he always found place for extempore prayer. In the mornings, of course, strictly denominational services would be held.

May I take this opportunity of expressing my dissatisfaction with the traditional Y.M.C.A. "Song Service." I am perfectly certain that owing to its lack of the forms of worship and reverence it fails to attract any but men of a certain type of nonconformity. In a word, I seem to detect in it a form of playing to the gallery. It certainly does not do justice to the real spiritual feeling and intelligence that are present in the congregation. I am certain that this is true of the Yeomanry. I believe it to be so of the British Army as a whole. The desire to see things done decently and in order is an ingrained British quality, and as such should be respected. It is possible to make a tradition of being untraditional, and the attempt to be natural and informal may become a formal pose. A little reform in this matter would perhaps do something to make C. of E. padres more cordial and more happy in the Y.M.C.A. Because some clergy are too stiff is no reason why the Y.M.C.A should be sloppy.

As to my own religious efforts I am sorry to have so little to record, and I admit that perhaps I ought to have done more. As I had made up my mind only to do and say what I could with honesty, my failure is due to letting the rough-and-tumble of the life make me lose touch from time to time with the quickening spirit. But I have reason to believe that I have done more than I know. It is difficult to give reasons for this faith that is in me without appearing to be taking credit to myself. Whereas my constant feeling is one of astonishment that I have been allowed to be any help at all to men who have time and time again utterly humbled me by their thoughtfulness, kindness, and self-sacrifice for others.

Digitized by Google

I should not attempt to make a report upon it, were it not for a disposition in certain quarters to refuse to regard anything but meetings (and those of a quite distinct type) as evidence of religious work, and in their absence to condemn the Y.M.C.A. as irreligious. While quite ready to allow the place of such meetings and such modes of religious effort as being necessary if we are to reach all sorts and conditions of men, I do ask that those who work along these lines shall, at least, be less ready to condemn others who are as sincerely religious as they are.

My own conviction being that the essence of Christianity is in the way you treat your fellow men, and that the supreme Christian virtue is goodwill expressed in humility and service, I have tried to put these ideas into practice. I have therefore sought to rank as a private, attaching myself to the stretcher-bearers of the R.A.M.C., drawing my meals at the cook-house with them, sharing their bivouacs, and taking my place in their ranks on trek and reconnaissance. Living as close to the men as possible, I have sought constantly for ways to help them. I have always felt that let a Y.M.C.A. Secretary do what he will, he can never approach what a private soldier has to do and endure. It is impossible for him to efface the fact that he has a soft job, and always will have a soft job, compared with a man who has given up his freedom and surrendered himself utterly for life or death. He can only justify his existence by placing his life at their disposal. I am sure they were grateful to me for wishing to make myself one of them. I shall always be proud that they allowed me to become one of them.

My position did not hinder me from being on perfectly friendly terms with the officers, and no one could have had more cordial co-operation from the staff than I have had during these twelve months. That has been my way of religious service. I could do no other. Other men, other manners, and they do better work than I. At the same time, with my own experience at the back of me, I cannot regard with enthusiasm any attempt to enhance the "prestige" of the Y.M.C.A. by improving the status of the individual Secretary. We all know what an anomaly it is in the minds of many that chaplains should rank as captains. The good work they succeed in doing is not done through their rank, but in spite of it. G K. Chesterton has said that the great disaster of the Church of England is that its clergy must be gentlemen. I cannot help feeling that the great dis-

Digitized by Google

INTERIOR OF OFFICERS' LOUNGE, KANTARA.

To face page 138]

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

aster to the Y.M.C.A. would be if their Secretaries came to be regarded, even in their own estimation, as officers.

During the campaign itself I had hoped to remain as a stretcher-bearer, but all the Y.M.C.A. Secretaries being ordered to assist at C.C.S.'s, I obtained permission to remain with the Yeomanry Division Station with the immobile sections of the R.A.M.C. I succeeded in keeping this Receiving Station supplied with biscuits and cigarettes for the patients throughout, and also was able to help Infantry Receiving Stations at Beersheba and Sheria, and elsewhere, which were short of comforts for the wounded.

When with the assistance of the Major in charge of the motor ambulances I had established a regular supply of comforts, I moved on up the line in search of our tent section (Advance Receiving Station). I found them at Ramleh, but the advance had been so rapid that they were unable to evacuate patients or receive regular rations, so that it was obviously impossible for me to get comforts through. However, with Mr. Owens's help, I reached the remnants of the Brigade in the hills above Latron, and supplied them (and the 6th Brigade) with cigarettes on the very day on which the Turks made a heavy attack. Returning to Cairo for Christmas puddings for the Brigade, I received diphtheria as a supplementary gift from Y.M.C.A. Head-quarters. I served the Brigade for two months till it was cut in two and the R.A.M.C. disbanded. Unable to follow the half that went overseas, I went down to Jericho and fell among mosquitoes which gave me malaria; the germ thereof remaineth unto this day.

When the further advance was made across the Jordan the Y.M.C.A. accompanied the troops across, and the following report from Thos. Jones indicates what occurred:

One of the most difficult undertakings I have been called upon to accomplish since my fifteen months' association with the 1st Brigade was the journey to the battle area on March 24, with comforts for the troops. Accompanying me was Mr. A. L. Anderson, Secretary in charge of the 2nd Brigade, also Chaplain Boardman, Church of England Padre, who is returning to Australia. I understand he is going to give a series of lectures on the Holy

Digitized by Google

Land, illustrated by lantern slides. I gave him every facility to see our advanced work, of which he took several photographs.

The venture was, more or less, at first sight a "forlorn hope," inasmuch as the exact destination was unknown, and only guided by approximation, in view of the rapid advance, our units daily changing their positions.

However, leaving our base camp, with two motor cars loaded with cigarettes, chocolate, matches, etc., we headed for Jerusalem, arriving there after some two hours' journey. Staying the night under the hospitality of our Y.M.C.A., we proceeded on the following day for Jericho, so that the exact rendezvous of our destination could be more readily gauged. The ride through the mountainous country was brimful of interest from a biblical point of view. Eventually we reached the hills overlooking the valley of the Jordan and the Dead Sea. The fine five-pole marquee on the extreme right of the front line must prove a great haven of rest for tired soldiers "trekking" through the steep hills. Having delivered the mail and special purchases to Mr. Harbridge, little time was lost in proceeding onwards. The valley of the Jordan gradually burst into view, and later on the Dead Sea, where the rapid-flowing Jordan empties its waters therein.

The stay at Jericho was only a matter of a few moments to allow the petrol supply to be augmented, also to gather some new information regarding the Brigade's locality. On the outskirts of the town, numerous prisoners from the recent heavy fighting were noticed, evidently quite happy: their fighting days were over, and they were in the hands of generous captors. At 1.30 p.m. the Jordan was conquered by the Y.M.C.A., the crossing being effected for the first time in the war by the "Red Triangle." Only a few hours previously our army had established themselves at a bridge-head on the famous Jordan.

Evidences of the heavy fighting on the previous night now began to appear A run of five miles east of the river across the Jordan Valley brought us to a point within very easy range of the enemy's batteries. Only an hour previously the ground had been heavily bombarded by the Turks. At this stage, a geographical obstacle was made manifest in the nature of a running stream, with steep banks. A big gale was now blowing accompanied by rain, and hope now became despair. After about half an hour's delay, it was decided to cross about a mile farther back. The first motor having successfully negoti-

Digitized by Google

Y.M.C.A., JERUSALEM.

To face page 140]

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

ated the stream, the water reaching over the axles, motor No. 2 followed suit. Shortly afterwards the long journey of sixty miles terminated after an uphill fight. Upon reaching the outskirts of the Brigade we ran across a number of the "Dinkums," who gave us a rousing welcome. Greeted with cries "Have you any cigarettes, Y.M.?" which was promptly answered in the affirmative, and the signal for vociferous cheering, we ultimately stopped at Brigade Head-quarters. General Cox gave his acquiescence to the calling together of the quartermasters of all units in the establishments both major and minor. The apportionment, quite an intricate problem, was soon fixed, and goods issued out *pro rata* in accordance with the strength of respective units.

The following indicates the apportionment:

Matches, 1,250 boxes @ pt. 0.5 . . .	£E.6.250
Chocolate, 1,152 bars @ pt. 1.5 . . .	17.280
Cigarettes, 1,250 packets @ pt. 3.0 . .	37.500
Cigarettes, 1,000 packets @ cost . . .	6.800
Palestine News, 150 @ pt. 1.0 . . .	1.500
Quantity of writing paper.	
	£E.69.330

The General and various members of the Brigade Staff thanked me for tackling such a hazardous journey and surmounting the innumerable obstacles which came our way. Having said "Good-bye," we retraced our journey back to Jerusalem, where the whole party was still smiling and ready for another sortie around the wilds of the Dead Sea. *En passant*, I would like to chronicle the valuable assistance rendered by Secretary Anderson and the two motor drivers, Troopers Feehan and Bliss, who had a very hard and dangerous task before them.

The general distribution of the Y.M.C.A. work in Egypt by September 1918 is set out in Appendix V. It is interesting to note now the definite way members of the Y.M.C.A. are allotted to different Divisions and Brigades; in other words, the Y.M.C.A. organization had adapted itself to the military organization.

Digitized by Google

This chapter may be concluded with the following letter from Philip Marshall Brown, a Professor of International Law in the University of Princeton, himself a Y.M.C.A. worker, who visited the front, and delivered a number of lectures on America and other subjects to the troops. He arrived in April 1918, and saw the Y.M.C.A. work in full development, and his criticism as from one coming fresh on the scene is exceedingly interesting:

Like the children of Israel the Y.M.C.A. was compelled to sojourn a while in Egypt. Unlike the Israelites it suffered no grievous wrongs, but was appealed to by the modern Pharaohs to assist in caring for the army that was to enter the Promised Land. The demoralizing experiences of the first troops in Egypt made the need of the Y.M.C.A. painfully apparent. An ideal site in the midst of the beautiful Esbekieh Gardens right in the heart of Cairo, adjoining the unspeakable Wazzar red-light district, was provided for the Y.M.C.A. There, day and night, crowds of soldiers, on perilous leave from near-by camps, can find wholesome recreations, all kinds of refreshments, and nourishment as well for the mind as the soul. A dozen and more self-denying ladies are on hand every day to serve these refreshments, and remind the men that there are women who care abroad as well as at home. The Anzac Hostel in the old Bourse of Cairo, with another building near at hand, furnishes comfortable and hospitable lodging for the soldiers. In St. David's Buildings are the busy offices of the Y.M.C.A. in Egypt, under the devoted and efficient generalship of Mr. William J. Jessop of the International Committee.

In Alexandria, close to the sea-side, in the heart of the city, is a very attractive Y.M.C.A. compound, especially planned for this purpose and ministering to the various wants of thousands of soldiers passing through or encamped in the vicinity. So likewise in the rest camps in the neighbourhood of Alexandria and along the Suez Canal. Port Said and Suez, which Kipling has immortalized as the limit of Western civilization, are well provided with Y.M.C.A. centres to counteract fearful oriental places of vice, and to remind men of other ideals. Kantara, the neck of the bottle through which passes a never-ending stream of men to and fro from the battle-front, possesses a model group

Digitized by Google

Y.M.C.A., JAFFA.

CINEMA, JAFFA.

To face page 142]

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

of buildings built of concrete and planned expressly for the work of the Y.M.C.A. A unique feature is the special quarters for officers, a kind of comfortable club where they can find diversion, rest, and refreshment. A devotional hut is a place of more than ordinary interest. Night after night, irrespective of other attractions in the neighbouring concert hall, men gather together for prayer and praise under the concentrated leadership of "Padre" Morris, and others like him. When one thinks of the proverbial reserve of the Britisher it is an amazing sight at the close of the formal meeting to see groups of men all over the room kneeling together for prayer, and such earnest, confident, heart-stirring prayer! one cannot fail to be filled with great hope and pride, when he knows that Great Britain has men like these fighting for the sacred right of mankind.

Like the children of Israel the Y.M.C.A. also had its wanderings and trials in the wilderness of Sinai. For months, Secretaries lived in dug-outs in the hot sand, ministering as best they could in the name of the Master to the very great needs of men who found in the Y.M.C.A. the only cheerful oasis in this terrible desert. As soon as General Allenby, the modern Samson, removed the gates of Gaza on the borders of the Promised Land, the Y.M.C.A. followed them along in a rapid march into Jerusalem and beyond on the road leading towards Nablus, Nazareth, and Cæsarea. Wherever the troops have gone—to Jericho, over the Jordan, along the hills of Judea to Solomon's pools, Bethel, and across the plains of Sharon to Jaffa and Antipatris—the Y.M.C.A. has always been with them, in spite of difficulties in transit and the lamentable lack of Secretaries.

In Jerusalem, though greatly handicapped by lack of accommodation and insufficient staff of workers, the Association has managed to extend a welcoming hand to thousands of soldiers. Guides are provided for a limited number of men to take them about the Holy Places, and to endeavour to help them catch something of the inspiration that ought to be felt by every Christian who follows in the steps of the Master.

A word should be said on the internal business arrangements which rendered all this work possible. It will be remembered that in 1915 and the greater part of 1916 the entire work of the Y.M.C.A. was in Egypt, and

Digitized by Google

scarcely extended east of the Canal. The work was then easily directed by the General Secretary of the Y.M.C.A., but, with a long line of communications to cities like Jaffa and Jerusalem, 200 miles away, the problem altered. Mr. Jessop was still in general charge, but Mr. Owens was Supervising Secretary in Palestine, and definite business arrangements became necessary so that confusion should not occur.

The story of the work in Egypt would not be complete without some reference to the Lena Ashwell Y.M.C.A. Concert Party, which consisted of: Miss Marjorie Ffrangcon Davies (soprano), Miss Grace Ivell (contralto), Miss Sylvia de Gay (violinist), Miss Yvette Pienne (elocutionist), Mr. Bret Hayden (humorist), Mr. Theodore Flint (pianist and manager).

The party was one of those organized by a special committee of the English Y.M.C.A. controlled by the Princess Victoria and Miss Lena Ashwell. They arrived in Egypt in October 1916, mainly through the help of H.E. Lady MacMahon and the Marchioness of Tullibardine (now Duchess of Atholl).

The organization was placed under the control of the Y.M.C.A. Army Work Committee in Egypt, and the tours were arranged by them in conjunction with the Soldiers' Entertainment Committee.

The members gave, at first, all their time to the Sidi Bishr Rest Camp, and it was largely for the benefit of this camp that permission was granted them to land in Egypt. The party commenced touring in Cairo on November 27, 1916, subsequently went to Upper Egypt and the Western Desert, and in the middle of December to the Canal, special permission having been given by the Commander-in-Chief.

After visiting practically every camp they were

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

CAMOUFLAGED Y.M.C.A. MARQUEE IN NABLOUS ROAD.

To face page 145]

Digitized by Google

desirous of returning home or to some other field, but permission could not be given for ladies to travel in the Mediterranean and the whole party very kindly took charge of all the canteen and refreshment work in the Y.M.C.A. centre at Aboukir.

The party resumed concert work in the spring of 1918, and after visiting Alexandria and Cairo again went to the Canal, and travelled as far as El Arish. After a considerable stay at this centre two of the party (Miss de Gay and Miss Davies) left the party in order to be married and the remaining four members continued concert work, going on to Gaza, Ludd, Jaffa, and Jerusalem.

Since the conclusion of their tour in Palestine and owing to the shortage of Y.M.C.A. Secretaries, the four members of the party have kindly taken charge of the hostels and centres in Jaffa, where they are still doing excellent service. The work Miss Grace Ivell, Miss Pienne, Mr. Flint, and Mr. Hayden have been doing at Jaffa has been very heavy indeed and most successful, and their services were offered at a time when help was invaluable.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XIV

PHYSICAL EDUCATION

THE British people, with their traditional love of outdoor exercises and of indulgence in games, have, nevertheless, never taken Physical Education seriously; it will surprise them to find that many American Universities contain, on the staff, a Professor of Physical Education, who is a graduate in that subject, and whose social and professional rank is similar to that of any other professor. There is as much difference between the instructor in the gymnasium or a drill sergeant and the Professor of Physical Education, as there is between a hospital orderly and a medical practitioner.

In Australia at all events, the country which I know best, the probable cause is the retention of many evil traditions as regards learning. Educationalists in general do not formally recognize the fact that the care of the body of a healthy man is just as important as the cure of the body of a sick man, and requires an equivalent amount of directing skill. In Chapter II we showed that the Y.M.C.A. had formally recognized the problem and caters for the physical, intellectual and moral wants of men, and provides a professorial staff to deal with each of these phases. At the risk of being tedious, I propose to deal with this matter at some little length, as it was closely concerned with the welfare of the Army in Egypt.

Digitized by Google

The following references to the American Playground System appeared in *The Egyptian Gazette*, and, whilst the connection between the American Playground System and war service may not at first sight be obvious, I hope to make the association plain before the conclusion of the chapter:

Throughout the United States, during the last twenty years, a gigantic Educational Instrument has been developed, now generally known throughout the world as the American Playground system. It commenced in a small way, being designed to meet an obvious want in crowded cities, and has developed into a system on which millions of pounds sterling are being expended, and which is managed by a very large staff of professional teachers. There has, further, grown up in connection with it a most extensive technical and philosophical literature. It has spread from the United States into many other parts of the world; it is making a slow entry into conservative England; its impress has been felt in the Philippine Islands and in Bengal; a commencement has been made in Australia, and in Canada it is fully understood. Egypt remains one of the few places under British influence in which, up to the present, no effort has been made to effect its acclimatization. It is worth while therefore to inquire "What are its aims and what are the advantages of introducing it into such a country as Egypt?"

The Meaning of Play

What is it that we mean by play? Many definitions have been attempted, but the one which goes nearest to the truth is that which asserts that in play the end means very little, the result involves no serious responsibility, but the immediate activity is everything. At serious work, the result is everything, the means matter very little. If this definition is accepted, as we feel it must be, it then follows that many people play when they think they are working, and some work when they think they are playing. The fact remains, however, that practically all human beings possess the play instinct. The form of play differs according to the period of life, and grades from the exuberant, extravagant, and sometimes misdirected energy of the young to the purely sedentary attitude of the player whose career is

Digitized by Google

approaching its end. The play instinct holds man from the cradle to the grave, and with age its annulment is too frequently a misfortune. Not only, however, do human beings play, but the great majority of animals play too. Anyone acquainted with the habits of wild animals—not to speak of domesticated ones—are sometimes astonished at the degree of elaboration of the play instinct. The writer has seen a large kangaroo playing with a fair-sized dog, its mortal enemy—the kangaroo in fighting position, pretending to catch the dog with a view to destroying it, then running away, followed by the dog pretending to catch the kangaroo. It need hardly be said that the kangaroo was partly domesticated, but the organized nature of the game was obvious.

Origin of Playground Movement

Now those who initiated the American Playground System recognized this fundamental fact; they saw that all men possess the play instinct, and that children possess it to a degree. They recognized in it an instinct that must be satisfied, and they saw in it an instrument ready to solve the peculiarly difficult problem with which they were faced. The American industrial cities are of enormous size, they have grown with exceeding rapidity, they have not been built on Garden City lines, and they often contain tens of thousands of people of alien origin. The position then which the American administrations were compelled to face was a city of masses of houses and streets, with few open spaces, and of such dimensions that visits to the playing fields were out of the question. They found that the children were playing in the streets, they were playing in the alley-ways; they were playing in the slums, and they were growing up knowing many things which children should not know, and not knowing many things which children should know. With characteristic American determination, these reformers set themselves to work out a plan. In these crowded cities they bought up land, cleared it, and created what are known as recreation centres, in other words "Playgrounds." For example in 1912 in the city of Chicago there were thirty-seven centres; there are probably a great many more of them to-day. Their position is determined in relation to density of population, and the ideal is to drain areas with a radius of about ⅜ths of a mile, since it is found that little children cannot travel a greater

Digitized by Google

distance. These centres then became the focus of social life in the district. They differ greatly in size, and a good deal in detail, but the following are the fundamental characteristics :

The Method Described

They consist of an outdoor and an indoor portion, and the outdoor portion is usually divided into four compartments; (1) A reservation for children under ten years of age, provided with swings, sand-heaps, a wading-pool, and usually benches for the mothers; (2) A reservation suitably equipped with basket ball and other games for girls under sixteen; (3) A like reservation for boys under fourteen or sixteen, somewhat differently equipped, and (4) there is also a larger playing field for older boys and men.

The indoor portion contains a central social hall, and generally two wings, one for men and one for women. Each wing contains lockers, lavatories, a shower-bath, a swimming bath, and frequently game rooms and a library. The essential feature of the system, and that on which its success altogether depends, is the provision of educated and professional supervision. In charge of such a playground as that described, there is placed a superintendent. In charge of each division there is a play leader, and attendants are provided in addition. In consequence a considerable sum must be set aside annually for the necessary salaries. In 1912 there were 5,000 professional play-leaders in the United States, and the annual expenditure on these grounds approached a million a year. The object of the system is to provide for organized co-operative play. Unsupervised and unorganized play usually ends in disorder and a request from the neighbours to close the ground.

A Colossal Educational System

Now from the foregoing sketch it will be seen that the Americans have really established a colossal educational system. It stands side by side with the educational system which provides the necessary training for livelihood. The Playground System provides the training necessary for the better and fuller enjoyment of life, apart from the earning of a livelihood, and they secure the attendance of those taught by adroitly using the lure of

Digitized by Google

"Play," a bait from the attractiveness of which few people are immune.

Two quotations from those concerned will best indicate their motives. Frank D. Watson is quoted as saying: "It is during leisure, rather than work time, that character is formed. The basis of character is the will, and at no time does this function of the mind have so free a scope as during recreation. It is then that all restraint is removed, and we do as we will. Excellent effects of recreation on character are seen in children at play Often for the first time they learn the meaning of self-restraint; they learn the significance of co-operation and action in those games requiring team work. At play the cheat is quickly discovered and punished with ostracism by his fellows. Such object-lessons in fundamental morality are invaluable in the development of any child."

And Dr. Gulich says: "A fundamental condition for the development of free people is that they shall in childhood learn to govern themselves. Self-government is to be learnt as an experience rather than taught as a theory. Hence in a permanent democracy adequate playgrounds for all children are a necessity When a municipality makes it illegal to play in the streets, it should provide places where play will not only be lawful, but encouraged."

Its Local Applicability

Above we indicated the enormous extent to which the American Playground System has developed, and tried to show in the form of a brief sketch that it was the outcome of industrialism, and that it represented a systematic attempt to combat the evils of overcrowding and consequent lack of healthy social life. In the central hall of these playgrounds, entertainments are frequently given, and any citizen can, on giving proper notice, and making the necessary arrangements, give a dance for his or her friends in this hall, the playground organization bearing the incidental expense. An English investigator, impressed with this unusual arrangement, asked the superintendent of a playground the reason for this feature of the system, and obtained the following characteristic reply: "Young people will dance somewhere, and it is better that they should dance under the conditions we arrange for them, than in the saloon round the corner." In his answer there is indicated the central principle

Digitized by Google

of the system: Given instincts that are certain to be gratified, how can we make the gratification most advantageous to their possessors?

It is quite easy to understand the part the recreation centre plays in the lives of the people of the American cities. The play of the alley-way, with all its evils, becomes replaced by the organized game in the playground, under supervision and in contact with healthy people, and the resultant influence is physical, intellectual, and moral.

Professional Supervision Necessary

Before leaving, however, direct reference to what has been done in the United States, it is necessary again to emphasize the fact that a playground or recreation centre which is not under professional supervision is not only a disadvantage to the city, but is usually found from bitter experience to be positively dangerous. It has been the writer's experience to find the citizens living in the neighbourhood of an unsupervised playground lodging a petition for its closure. It is further necessary for supervisors and play-leaders to be educated men and women of high character, and so far it is only in the Universities of the United States, and in the Y.M.C.A. College in the United States, that such education has been formally undertaken.

Conditions in Egypt

With these observations in mind, let us survey the conditions existing in Egypt to-day. Two very large cities, Alexandria and Cairo, are steadily expanding. Land is very valuable, and the expansion has been effected without the application of town-planning principles. There are very few public reservations, and public playgrounds practically do not exist, yet anyone who drives or walks through the streets of these cities must be impressed with the fact that the play instinct is there. The children play in the streets, in the gutters, and amongst the refuse, just as children do all over the world, other opportunities not being available. The adolescent Egyptian seems to take kindly to football, but, so far, cricket seems to have made little impress on him. At the sporting clubs some of them play tennis, and occasionally an Egyptian is seen playing a game of golf. The concern of the statesman, however, will not be so much with the

Digitized by Google

occupations of those who can afford to play golf or cricket or tennis; he will be concerned with making provision for the gutter children, and for those whose circumstances preclude indulgence in the sporting clubs, once he is satisfied that the play instinct of every Egyptian should be satisfied and developed. Those who know the Egyptian well are inclined to think that if he participated from childhood in organized games, and consequently understood the meaning of the English expression "playing the game," he might be more successful in future life from every point of view; in other words, that it is the absence of this training in childhood that is responsible for something lacking in his character. This is a question, however, which Egyptians could better discuss and answer for themselves. What may be asserted without reservation is, that if he participates in organized games, he will not be the worse for it, he is certain to enjoy them, and he may be very much better, since that is the experience of every race on the face of the globe to whom this system has been applied.

How to Set to Work

Turning to details, what is required? Clearly in the cities the purchase of allotments and their development on the lines laid down by the play-leaders in the United States. In order to effect supervision, it would be necessary either to employ American play-leaders in the first instance, or to send some Egyptians to America to enable them to become personally acquainted with the system. It is desirable always to introduce such a system as this into a country gradually, and by the experimental method. In the first instance it would be desirable to purchase, establish, and staff one small centre in Cairo, and one in Alexandria, and to let the movement develop in Fgypt on lines largely determined by the experience gained in these experimental centres.

There is, however, in Egypt a much larger problem: The bulk of the population is agricultural, and the form of play centre required for an agricultural population differs profoundly from that required for a city population, and one experimental centre might be established in an agricultural district, under the guidance of those who understand the district and the habits of the people. Those who have been doing hard manual work through the bulk of the day are much more likely to take to

Digitized by Google

sedentary games and similar forms of recreation than those employed in an office, factory, or in domestic work. Once the principle of the system is understood, its application to different cities and different districts must vary with local peculiarities.

The writer invites those who have the interests of the Egyptian at heart to examine the American Playground System for themselves and to determine the best method of applying it to this ancient country.

This article was followed by another from a different pen, which appeared shortly afterwards in *The Egyptian Gazette* :

PLAY AND PLAYGROUNDS

How they would Benefit Young Egyptians

I read with great interest the two articles on play and playgrounds published in *The Egyptian Gazette*, and was gratified to know that someone has realized the necessity for such institutions for the children of Egypt.

Being a member of the American Playground Association, and having helped to organize some of the large playgrounds in America, I have naturally studied this question in regard to Egypt. The more I study the problem and view conditions, the more convinced I am that playgrounds would do more for Egypt than they have done for America.

The reasons are far too many for me to give in this article, but those who are interested may find some of the reasons by reading the paper by M. A. Nadoury, which was published in *The Egyptian Gazette*, on "Social Science in Egypt." Consider the facts he presents on the lack of education, and how the home and street life is ruining the lives of Egyptian boyhood. Do you know of any other country where similar conditions exist to such an extent ?

Then read the two articles, likewise published in this paper, on Play and Playgrounds. Consider what the Playground movement has done for the children of America, from a physical, mental, moral, and social standpoint, and I am sure you can then realize why I have made the statement that playgrounds would do more for Egypt than they have done for America.

Digitized by Google

Picture of a Playground

The question having been dealt with from a scientific standpoint, it is my plan to paint you a mental picture of a Playground, such as I would construct for Egypt, and give you my reasons for its equipment, activities, organization, and administration.

Situated on one of the main thoroughfares of Cairo is a large piece of ground which one seldom passes without seeing a great number of boys playing football, or some other game. It is a playing ground for the hundreds of boys in this district, and it is here I shall picture to you my Playground. As one views the grounds from the large entrance facing the boulevard, one sees a large level field enclosed by a high wire fence. Along the sides of the fence, at regular intervals, are fine shady trees. Inside the grounds, in various places, are numerous small groves of trees with seating accommodation under them. These are the resting places of the boys; the place for the team "in bats," and where the spectators may view the activities. Here also are placed the sanitary drinking fountains, where the boys may quench their thirst.

In the centre of the field is a quarter of a mile running track where the weekly athletic meets are held. The space enclosed by the track is the ground for such games as soccer, cricket, base-ball, and all those games requiring a large amount of ground. At one side is another field, containing tennis, playground, and volley ball courts, which only require a small place.

You wonder why so much of our Playground is given to games?

The Value of Games

Games, in my estimation, are one of the greatest factors in character building, and involve in their playing all those principles which make for right manhood. Every one realizes the effect of games from the physical standpoint. The increase in muscular development, lung capacity, etc.; in fact the majority think the physical benefit is the only good derived from the playing of games, but in my estimation this is a minor benefit.

A youth comes to the Playground and watches the other boys playing their games. He would like to play, but he has never participated in games before, and is shy in making a start. The director entices the youth into a game, and he enjoys himself to

Digitized by Google

the fullest extent. He makes new friends and playmates, and his shyness is overcome. In no other phase of life's activities can it be done so thoroughly and quickly, as in the playing of games. Thus we have started the growth of a social nature. He continues his play day after day, and finds that in certain games he is better than his playmates. He sees new plays and formations and suggests them, and they are accepted. The boys, realizing his ability as a player and leader, make him their captain.

The Making of a Leader

Thus we have developed in that youth a confidence in his own powers, and have made him a leader among his playmates. A leader among boys will, by proper encouragement and training, become a leader among men. Being a leader and captain, he sees that certain fundamental principles are necessary for victory, and so imparts to his team those principles. He makes each member realize he is part of a machine, that each one at times must sacrifice his own glory for the benefit of team play, and to pass the ball and play the game. He tells them to fight to the last, to be honourable in victory and game in defeat.

To me, the development of a boy into what we term "a good sportsman" is the greatest benefit derived from the playing of games. The English boy learns these things in the school, but as only about 2 per cent. of the children of Egypt go to school, it is a thing unknown. Therefore the playground becomes the educational centre for the boy.

We have by the playing of games developed our boy physically and socially, and have made him a leader among his playmates. We have likewise taught him those principles of sportsmanship which, if carried into whatsoever work he tries, is bound to give success. Activities which can give a boy such sterling qualities should have a conspicuous place in our playground programme.

We next visit the gymnasium. There we see, suspended from two large iron frames, swings, bars, rings, swinging ladders and poles, stall bars, etc. Here the boys enjoy themselves swinging or doing stunts on the bars or rings. Classes are formed among those keen on this phase of the work and they are taught marching, dumb-bell drills, apparatus work, and gymnastic dancing. It is a revelation to parents when they see the fine work which can be done with their boys.

Digitized by Google

Having inspected the running track, athletic field, and gymnasium, we now come to the Club House. It is a one-story building with a large shady verandah. It contains the director's office, stock and locker room, and shower baths.

The Hub of the Playground

The director's office is the hub of the Playground, for from this room the entire work of the place is directed. Here meetings are held, records kept, boys interviewed, measured, and medically examined. The locker room is not used by all. It is a dressing-place for visiting teams and those members who require a locker. The shower baths, of which there are many, are all placed in one large room, which contains nothing which can be injured, yet it is to this room that we try and get every boy to come each time he visits the Playground. Cleanliness is one of the habits taught on a Playground. One cannot expect a boy to be spick and span in the midst of physical activities, but we do expect a boy to come with some degree and go away with a perfect degree of cleanliness. A boy cannot be forced into keeping clean, but by tactful methods one can usually obtain this desire.

Changing Dirty Faces

Several years ago I was director of a large Playground in America which was situated in an iron mill district. Everything in the district was dirty, and the boys were no exception. One day I called the boys together for a base-ball game. I picked two teams and those chosen were well pleased. I looked over the teams, and selecting three boys out of the group, told them they had better drop out as I was afraid they would not be recognized by the teams they were playing for, owing to the dirt on their faces. . . . I did this on several occasions and in several branches of sport, and soon the faces of those keen to get into the games fairly shone.

Having won the leading boys, it was only a matter of time before their example was followed by the majority. Thus by means of the regard the boys held for their director, he, in his diplomatic way, can teach such laws of hygiene as care of teeth, skin, ears, etc. There is no end to the good which can be done by the conscientious director.

Digitized by Google

The Director

The organization looks to be a complex thing, requiring a great number of men to carry on the work, but the actual number required depends on the ability of the Director. He must possess a love for children and his work, and know the psychology of a child's mind from beginning to end. He must be an all-round athlete, capable of playing every game better than any boy on his grounds, and most of all he must possess the character after which every boy can pattern. They are bound to make him their hero, and if a boy's hero falls, the child nature receives a hard shock. Tact and patience with the ability to organize make up some of the chief virtues required in a successful playground director. If all these qualifications are not found in one man, then others must be chosen to make up those things which the other lacks. The ideal situation and the best results are obtained from the one-man plan.

Leaders' Corps

The leaders' corps is formed by the director to help in the government of the Playground. It consists of those boys who are the leaders in the various activities. They represent every game, and it is at the meetings of this corps that the leagues, athletic meets, exhibitions, etc., are organized.

Each boy reports on the needs, the numbers interested, and anything pertaining to the game he represents.

Here also the director gives his report on the condition of affairs. He praises some, suggests certain plans to others, and encourages those who have difficulties. A word to this group regarding the throwing of paper on the ground, the uncleanliness of the majority, cursing or rough play, usually corrects the fault.

No boy is allowed on the grounds under eleven years of age. Those under that age have a separate ground, for their work is of a different nature. One would think it would be an impossibility to form a number of teams of boys about the same age, height, and ability. It is a curious thing, but this is done almost entirely by the boys.

There are just three natural divisions between eleven and eighteen years, and the boys themselves find the group for which they are best suited. Those from eleven to fourteen form a

Digitized by Google

group interested in one series of games; while those from fourteen to sixteen choose another series. Those over sixteen usually constitute the working boys, and they choose still another group of activities.

These natural divisions have been put in a table form by Dr. Luther Gulich, and it shows the age at which various games and sports begin, are most popular, and wane in interest. Our Playground opens at eight in the morning, closes at twelve, reopens at three in the afternoon, and closes when it is dark.

The hours from 8 a.m. to 5 p.m. are for the boys who do not work. At 5 p.m. these boys are sent home and the grounds are for the use of the young and older men.

The twilight leagues are big affairs. The younger men go in for active sports, while the older men play a set of tennis, pitch quoits, etc.

There is no fee for membership. Everyone is free to come and go as he pleases, and all that is asked is that they conduct themselves as "good sportsmen."

This, in a brief way, is the picture of our Playground, with an outline of its activities, organization, and administration. I hope each one can visualize what this "funland" would mean to the children of Egypt. It is said that "In the schoolroom a child prepares to live, on the playground he lives." As the majority of the children of Egypt have neither school nor playground, theirs is but an existence.

Let us then realize the value of these laboratories of character building.

Now, in the United States, the Playground work is undertaken almost entirely by the Municipalities, but graduates in physical education, of the type turned out at Springfield College, are employed freely in directing operations, and my reason for quoting the articles above is to give readers some idea of the spirit of the movement and the necessity for understanding both the science and the art of this subject. It will be remembered that during 1917 a commencement was made at a Convalescent Depot of the use of organized games for facilitating the recovery and the continuance of the

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

G. Gilbert Deaver, M.D., B.P.E.

[*To face page* 159

Digitized by Google

well-being of the patients. For this purpose a Y.M.C.A. instructor was placed at the disposal of the medical authorities. The movement was successful, so far as it went, and the Y.M.C.A. in Egypt then determined to import into Egypt, by direction, a fully trained physical director, and during the year G. Gilbert Deaver, M.D., B.P.E., made his appearance, and took charge of the Y.M.C.A. activities in this direction. On his arrival, he was first employed in conducting voluntary classes at the Esbekieh Club, and a little later at a hospital at Helouan, which was being used for orthopædic purposes, and he here introduced the method of physical training for disabled soldiers with the aid of music. The method was successful, though the scale of operations was necessarily small. But the method attracted a good deal of notice, and when the Command Depots were formed, by arrangement between the military and the Y.M.C.A., Dr. Deaver's services were placed at disposal. Men entering a Command Depot are divided practically into four groups, and the work of the lowest group, the fourth, is chiefly medical. In the other three groups the training is military. The object is to harden up and refit men who, during stay in hospital, have become unfit for heavy exercise.

The method conducted, either with a piano in a room for say 100 men, or out-of-doors with a band for as many as 1,500 men, is very attractive. It is a welcome relief from the work of the drill instructor and sergeant-major, it can be graduated to a nicety with varieties in the rhythm, and it begins with exercises that a moribund might well undertake. The contrast between this and the Swedish exercises for men in this condition is most remarkable; the one implies interest and amusement, the other a formal effort.

Digitized by Google

The following Syllabus gives an idea of the nature of the work undertaken:

PHYSICAL TRAINING WITH MUSIC

By G. Gilbert Deaver, M.D., B.P.E., Y.M.C.A., Physical Director with the E.E.F.

At the request of many officers and other ranks who have come under my direction for physical training, I have set forth in this little book a detailed set of exercises, all of which are adaptable for use in hospital, convalescent home, command depot, or any military unit. They are suitable for men in all stages of training—whether just discharged from hospital or Class A—the choice of exercises, number of groups, speed of music, and the power put in each exercise, varying accordingly.

Everything is done by imitation—thus avoiding lengthy explanations—and a single instructor from a platform or other point of vantage can drill as many men as can see him, hence a minimum staff is required.

The system depends on good, lively music, supplied by a band for a large parade outdoors, or a piano for smaller numbers indoors, and by allowing the men to hum, sing, or whistle with the music an added zest is given to the performance of the exercises.

This method, on a large scale, was first put into practice at the Command Depot, Abbassia, Cairo, where, on an average, fifteen hundred men participated daily. Of these the majority suffered from disabilities, such as stiffness following gunshot wounds, operations, myalgia, etc., etc., or that general muscular weakness which follows a long confinement to bed, and in a very short time most of them became physically fit.

With successful results already achieved, I confidently hope that this system will be extended to a far larger field in the fighting forces, and a greater degree of fitness and efficiency thereby obtained. Already it has been adopted by several hospitals, convalescent homes, and other Command Depots.

My thanks are due to Captain C. H. Burgess, R.A.M.C., Senior Medical Officer of the Command Depot, Abbassia, for his suggestions and helpful advice.

G. Gilbert Deaver.

Cairo,
May 30, 1918.

Digitized by Google

General Suggestions

The following suggestions are valuable to instructors, and should be carefully studied.

In starting a class be sure that the music is slow enough to allow the men to follow each exercise. As the men become familiar with the exercises the speed of the music should be increased.

The class begins all movements on the left side. The instructor, who is facing the class, begins on the right side. The exercises are all done by imitation, and the instructor must set each movement absolutely correct.

The class will put into the drill just as much snap and power as the instructor. For that reason the instructor must overemphasize the power he puts into each movement.

When changing exercises, the instructor must anticipate the new movement, assuming the new position one count before the men follow.

The instructor should take up such a position that the whole of the class can easily see him, and thus be able to follow the changing exercises.

The men should be encouraged to hum, whistle, or sing, hence the music should be modern and familiar.

A breathing exercise should be used between each group.

Music

In groups of fifty or sixty the piano or gramophone is used, but when the numbers exceed that amount an orchestra or band is needed. Every hospital ward has a gramophone, and any sister can drill a small group of men in certain exercises, and thus afford recreation for the men, and achieve a medical result. The march—quick time, waltz—slow time, schottische—or intermediate time, are the types of music used. Marches should be of a quick and snappy nature, and should be popular and familiar. Waltzes with a good swing and time, and with distinct breaks at the end of sixteen counts, are the types to be used. Schottisches should be used when one finds the marches too fast and the waltzes too slow.

Daily Programme

There is no definite daily programme, but the idea is to include the movements of the entire body in each day's exercises.

Digitized by Google

There are eleven groups of exercises and they are divided into five classes, as follows :

Class I.	Fingers and arms .	Group I.
Class II.	Legs	Group II.
Class III.	Trunk . . .	Groups III—IV.
Class IV.	Leg, trunk, and arm combined . .	Groups V—VIII.
Class V.	Arms and legs . .	Groups IX—XI.

Groups I. and II. are a part of every day's drill. One has the choice of one or more groups for the other three movements.

The instructor has plenty of exercises to vary the programme each day, if the above table is used.

Five groups usually last twenty minutes, and with the breathing exercises and dances the periods last approximately a half-hour.

There should be a group from each class in every drill.

Breathing Exercises

Breathe in through the nose and out through the mouth.

Position—Attention. Counts—16. Music—Waltz. Tempo—Slow.

Exercise I.

1. Inhale—Raise arms forward up to position overhead.
2. Exhale—Lower the arms sideways to attention.

Exercise II.

1. Inhale—Raise the arms sideways to position overhead.
2. Exhale—Lower arms to attention.

Exercise III.

1. Exhale—Body bent forward.
2. Inhale—Position.

Exercise IV.

1. Exhale—body bent to side.
2. Inhale—position.

Exercise V.

1. Exhale—body twist to side.
2. Inhale—position.

Group I

These exercises are used to start the day's programme. This is the "warming-up" group.

Digitized by Google

Exercises for fingers, wrists, arms, and shoulders.

Position—Attention. Counts 16. Music—March. Tempo—Moderato.

Exercise I.

1. Close the fingers.
2. Open.

Exercise II.

1. Arms forward, close fingers.
2. Open.

Exercise III.

1. Arms overhead, close fingers.
2. Open.

Exercise IV.

1. Arms side, close fingers.
2. Open.

Exercises V—VIII.

As Exercises I—IV in position, and changes with wrist bending in place of fingers.

Exercise IX.

1. Flex the forearm forward, keep upper arm and elbow at side.
2. Position—8 counts left, 8 counts right, 16 counts both.

Exercise X.

1. Flex forearm forward, elbow on a line with shoulder.
2. Position—counts as in Exercise IX.

Exercise XI.

1. Arms extend forward, pronate.
2. Supinate.

Exercise XII.

As Exercise IX.

Arms to the side.

Exercise XIII.

As Exercise X.

Arms to the side.

Exercise XIV.

As Exercise XI.

Arms to the side.

Exercise XV.

1. With arms half-flexed, roll the shoulders forward.

Digitized by Google

Group II

This group should follow Group I as part of the "warming-up" drill.

Exercises for leg.

Position—Hips firm. Counts—16. Music—March. Tempo—Moderato.

Exercise I.

1. Raise thigh forward.

Exercise II.

1. Raise leg forward.

Exercise III.

1. Flex leg back.

Exercise IV.

1. Raise leg back.

Exercise V.

1. Raise leg to side.

Exercise VI.

Using about five exercises with a running step. Position is the two count in this group. Alternate legs in each exercise.

Group III

This group is the first of the body movements.

Exercises for trunk and abdomen.

Position—Hips firm. Counts—32. Music—Waltz. Tempo—Moderato.

Exercise I.

1. Body bend forward.

Exercise II.

1. Body bend back.

Exercise III.

1. Body bend forward.
2. Body bend back.

Exercise IV.

1. Body bend to side (alternate sides).

Exercise V.

1. Body twist to side (alternate sides).

Digitized by Google

Exercise VI.

1. Deep knee bend.

The remaining four exercises are made by combining Exercise VI with Exercises I—IV, *i.e.*:

1. Deep knee bend.
2. Position.
3. Body bend forward.
4. Position.

(Counts 2 and 4 are position in these exercises.)

Group IV

This group is the second of the body movements.

Exercises for trunk and abdomen.

Position—Hips firm with astride stand position. Counts—32. Music—Waltz. Tempo—Moderato.

Exercise I.

1. Body bend forward to left oblique over left leg.
2. Position.

Exercise II.

1. Body bend forward to right oblique over right leg.
2. Position.

Exercise III.

1. Body bend back to left oblique.
2. Position.

Exercise IV.

1. Body bend back to right oblique.
2. Position.

Exercise V.

1. Body bend forward to left oblique.
2. Body bend back to right oblique.

Exercise VI.

1. Body bend forward to right oblique.
2. Body bend back to left oblique.

Exercise VII.

Alternate body bendings as in Exercises V and VI.

(Positions 2 and 4 count in this group.)

Group V

These exercises are extremely useful for men with leg disabilities.

Digitized by Google

Exercises for extremities and large muscle groups.

Position—Sitting, feet extended, arms forward. Counts—16. Music—Waltz. Tempo—Moderato.

Exercise I.

1. Body bend forward, arms extend forward, touching toes.
2. Body bend back, arms fling to the side.

Exercise II.

1. Body bend forward, arms extend forward, touching toes.
2. Body bend back, arms forward up.

Exercise III.

1. Body bend forward, arms extend forward, touching toes.
2. Body bend back, flex arms on chest.

Exercise IV.

1. Flex thigh on chest, grasping leg with hands and press.
2. Position (alternate legs).

Exercise V.

1. Flex both thighs on chest, grasp legs with hands and press.
Position.

Exercise VI.

1. Raise extended leg.
2. Position (alternate legs).

Exercise VII.

1. Raise both extended legs.
2. Position.

Exercise VIII.

1. Stretch leg to side.
2. Position (alternate legs).

Exercise IX.

1. Stretch both legs to side.
2. Position.

Exercise X.

1. Touch left foot over right.
2. Position (alternate legs).

Exercise XI.

1. Touch left foot and left arm over right.
2. Position (alternate legs and arms).

Exercise XII.

1. Flex arm and thigh on chest.
2. Position (alternate arm and thigh).

Exercise XIII.

1. Flex both arms and thighs on chest.

Digitized by Google

2. Position.

Exercise XIV.

1. Stretch arm and leg to side.
2. Position (alternate arms and legs).

Exercise XV.

1. Stretch both arms and legs to side.
2. Position.

Group VI

This group is used as an alternative to Groups VII and VIII.

Exercise for arms, legs, and trunk.

Position—Attention. Counts—32. Music—Waltz. Tempo—Moderato.

Exercise I.

1. Step forward, arms forward.
2. Trunk bend forward, arms swing back.

Exercise II.

1. Step to side, arms sideways raise.
2. Trunk bend to side.

Exercise III.

1. Step to side, arms sideways raise.
2. Trunk twist to side.

Exercise IV.

1. Step back, arms forward up.
2. Trunk bend back.

Exercise V.

1. Step to side, arms sideways raise.
2. Trunk bend forward, swing arms between legs.

(*Note.*—Count No. 3 is as 1, and 4 is position.)

Group VII

This group is one of the choice for the third set of exercises in the daily programme.

Exercises for arms and trunk.

Position—Astride stand position with hands clasped and flexed over right shouler. Counts—32. Music—Waltz. Tempo—Moderato.

Exercise I.

1. Trunk bend forward, swing arms between legs.
2. Position, and swing arms over left shoulder.

Digitized by Google

Exercise II.

1. Trunk bend forward, swing arms between legs.
2. Trunk position, arms forward up.
3. Trunk bend to side.
4. Trunk position, arms forward up.

Exercise III.

Counts 1, 2, 4 as Exercise II.

3. Trunk twist to side.

Exercise IV.

Counts 1, 2, 4 as Exercise II.

3. Trunk bend back.

Exercise V.

As Exercise I.

Group VIII

This group is one of the choice for the third set of exercises in the daily programme.

Exercises for arms and legs.

Position—Arms flexed on chest. Counts—32. Music—Waltz. Tempo—Fast.

Exercise I.

1. Left arm forward.
2. Right arm forward.

3–4. Both arms forward.

Exercise II.

1. Left arm forward and lunge forward with left leg.
2. Right arm forward and lunge forward with right leg.

3–4. Same with both arms and jumping forward.

Exercise III.

1. Same as Exercise I with arms to the side.

Exercise IV.

1. Same as Exercise II with arms and legs to the side.

Group IX

This group is made up of unco-ordinated movements of arms and legs.

Exercises for arms, legs, and muscle control.

Position—Attention. Counts—16. Music—Schottische or Waltz. Tempo—Moderato.

Exercise I.

1. Flex arms on chest.
2. Left arm forward, right arm side.

Digitized by Google

3. Flex arms on chest.
4. Position.

Exercise II.

2. Left arm up, right arm side.

Exercise III.

2. Left arm forward, right arm up.

Exercise IV.

2. Left arm forward, right arm side, left foot side.

Exercise V.

2. Left arm up, right arm side, left foot side.

Exercise VI.

2. Left arm forward, right arm up, left foot to side.

Exercise VII.

1. Arms forward, foot side.
2. Arms side, foot forward.
3. Arms forward, foot side.
4. Position.

Counts 1, 3, 4 are the same in Exercises II to VI as in Exercise I. Alternate legs and arms.

Group X

This group is used at the close of every day's programme.

Exercises for fingers and arms.

Position—Attention. Counts—32. Music—March. Tempo—Fast.

Exercise I.

1. Flex arms on chest, close fingers.
2. Arms stretch forward, open fingers.
3. Flex arms on chest.
4. Position.

Exercise II.

2. Arms stretch over head, open fingers.

Exercise III.

2. Arms stretch to side, open fingers.

Exercise IV.

2. Both arms stretch to side, open fingers, alternate sides.

Counts 1, 3, 4 are the same in each exercise.

Group XI

These exercises are to be used with Group X, as part of the daily programme.

Digitized by Google

Exercises for arms and legs.

Position—Attention. Counts—16. Music—March. Tempo——Fast.

Exercise I.

1. Flex left arm on chest, touch left foot forward.
2. Position.

Exercise II.

1. Flex right arm on chest, touch right foot forward.
2. Position.

Exercise III.

1. Alternate Exercises I and II.

Exercise IV.

1. Arms flex on chest, jump forward.
2. Position.

Exercises V, VI, VII.

As Exercises I, II, III, with arm and leg movements to the side.

Exercise VIII.

1. Arms flex at side, astride jump.
2. Position.

Polygon Dance

Movements have been chosen which bring in the musculature of the greater part of the body.

Position—Attention. Counts—16 or 32. Music—Tempo—Fast.

I. Highland Step.

1. Left foot to left oblique, left hand on hip, right hand up.
2. Draw left foot to side of right knee.
3. As 1, 4 as 2. 5. Drop left foot and touch right foot to oblique, change hands. 6. Draw right foot to side left knee. 7 as 5. 8 as 6. Repeat.

II. Springing Step.

1. Counts 1 to 8 as in Step 1.
9. Astride jump, swing arms overhead.
10. Position. Alternate 9 and 10 for remaining counts.

III. Spanish Step.

1. Counts 1 to 4 as in Step 1.
5. Place left foot to side, change hands, turn head and look at left foot.

Digitized by Google

6. Draw right heel to middle left foot.
7. Place left to side.
8. As 6.

Repeat, travelling back to original place by starting with right foot to right oblique.

IV. Rocking Step.

1. Counts 1 to 4 as in Step 1.
5. Cross left foot over right and drop left ankle, hands clasped in front.
6. Drop right ankle. 7 as 5. 8 as 6.
9. Arms overhead, raise left knee and step forward.
10, 11, 12. Stepping forward.
13, 14, 15. Stepping back.
16. Position.

V. Sailor Step.

1. Counts 1 to 4 as in Step 1.
5. Left foot to left oblique, left hand on abdomen, right hand on back.
6. Hop on left foot.
7. Right foot to right oblique, change hands.
8. Hop.

Counts 9 to 12 as 5 to 8.

13–15. Backward steps, arms moving up and down as if pulling up a rope.

VI. Charlie Step.

Counts 1 to 8 as Step 1.

Counts 9 to 12, walk forward, heels together, toes to side, legs stiff.

Counts 13 to 16, hopping to right side on right foot, arms outstretched.

Return to position in 16 counts, hopping back on left foot.

Oxen Dance

This is an extremely easy dance, which should be taught. It combines very good body movements with each step.

The men face each other, and the files are numbered.

Position—Hips firm. Counts—32. Music—March. Tempo—Slow.

I. 1–4. Odd numbers, trunk bend forward.

Digitized by Google

4–8. Even numbers, trunk bend forward.
Odd numbers, position.
Repeat for 8–12 and 12–16.

16–32. Alternate trunk bendings, on every other count.

II. Jump and touch right heel on ground.

III. Jump and turn half-left and cross right arms with partner.

IV. Deep knee bends, alternate as in I.

V. Odd numbers raise right hand, to partner's cheek. Even numbers clap hands. Alternate as in I.

Note.—All the counts are as in I. The movement is made on the first count, and the position held three counts, for the first 16 counts. On the last 16 counts the movements are made on every other count, either alternating or together.

This work was inspected by many distinguished visitors, and the movement rapidly spread. It was adopted not only in Command Depots, but in many hospitals, instructors being trained by Dr. Deaver. His objects and aims are well set out in the following sketch:

In reading the current physical magazines which reach me from time to time, I read long articles on the methods of training soldiers in war, but few on treating the results of war. That problem has not been brought home to America as yet, but the day is coming fast when this will be a serious question. So in this paper I wish to bring to your attention certain conditions and cases which I have seen and helped by exercise, and also a view of the work which is being done for the British soldiers in Egypt.

The line of travel of a wounded man is as follows: When wounded or taken sick he is sent down from the front to a hospital. There he is treated until convalescent, and then is sent to a convalescent home until he regains his normal health, when he is passed on to a Command Depot. In the Command Depot he is retrained and sent back to his unit. The treatment in the hospital is purely of a medical nature; the convalescent home is

Digitized by Google

in the form of a rest cure; while the Command Depot consists of Swedish drill, route marching, etc. As the greater part of my work is at present centred in the Command Depot, it is well to know something about its organization. It consists of a number of companies, the lowest being the medical, where men who have adhesions of joints to be broken down, weakness following operation, myalgia, irregular hearts, etc., are placed for supervised and more individual training. The next group is the semi-medical, where men start route marches and certain military training. The other higher groups through which the men pass are of a more strenuous military nature, and require no medical supervision.

I saw the possibilities of physical training in each of these places. In the hospital I found men who, having a finger shot away, a bullet wound in some extremity, fit in every respect save this local part, become absolute invalids for lack of exercise. These men in a few weeks become soft, and some, finding life far more comfortable than front-line work, became malingerers. Others soon developed the symptoms of those about them and became neurotics. Why could not these men be given physical training and outdoor activities to keep their minds employed and their bodies fit? The same conditions existed in the convalescent home, and the physical training in the medical and semi-medical group of the Command Depot was of little value.

This was the condition of affairs, in my estimation, in October 1917 in the physical training for the wounded men. I started with a class of sixty in a large hospital to give some form of exercise to the types of cases I described. I realized that Swedish drill was of little use for medical cases, for: (1) It concentrated the man's mind on his disability, which is what I wished to avoid. (2) A man with an injured part cannot hold one position for even a short period of time. (3) A man who had done everything by command since the war began wanted something of a different nature. I compiled twelve groups of exercises, easy to perform, but which would give the desired results. The exercises were all done to music, and the men sang as they turned and twisted and enjoyed the work.

The hospital I consider the primary place for physical training with the wounded. Keep the men fit by outdoor activities and drill, and thus prevent them from losing their body tone and becoming neurotics and malingerers. It should be a com-

Digitized by Google

pulsory part of their treatment. A sports ground is a necessity, and the outdoor activities should be of every possible kind—quoits, croquet, tennis, badminton, roller skating, swimming baths, base-ball, soccer, and running track. Organize leagues and sports days, and keep the men busy on the games their disability allows them to play. There are entirely too many sets of ping-pong and playing cards put into hospitals.

With these facts before you, do you not see the absolute necessity for a trained physical director in every hospital?

The results of the work in the hospital were evident, and I was asked to start the work in a Command Depot. I left a soldier whom I had trained in charge of the work there, and transferred my energy to this new field.

The medical and semi-medical groups in this depot consisted of over eighteen hundred men, and the organization was a slow process. To cover each detail would require long explanations, so I will give you a summary of the work done in physical training during each day. At 6 a.m. there is a grand parade of fifteen hundred men, and from a high platform I lead this large group. A band is used to supply the music, the instruments having been given by the Y.M.C.A., and when one hears the snappy, popular airs being played, "he just can't keep still." It is a wonderful sight to behold; and H.R.H. The Duke of Connaught, General Allenby, and other famous personages have viewed the drill and expressed their satisfaction.

It was realized that certain men would slack on this large parade, and that little personal supervision could be given the needy cases. So for the second half-hour's work I divided the men into squads of a hundred, and this work was done in a large mat hut with a piano. The outdoor games were carried on between classes all morning, and matches with other teams played in the afternoons. So in this way the general physical training of the groups is accomplished.

Cases are frequently met of men who appear to be unable to do the exercises owing to their wounds. These cases are immediately taken before the medical officer, and he decides the question. In some instances the man is excused certain exercises, but in the majority of cases he is told to try every movement. Myalgic patients are the pests of the medical officer, and they constantly complain of their inability to move their body. These cases are given an extra hour of drill a day with a special instructor, and

Digitized by Google

it is surprising how quickly the majority become cured when they receive this extra work. The true cases are given special exercises and massage, and special medical and dental attention is given along the lines of focal sepsis.

Another common complaint is D.A.H. or "disorderly arrangement of the heart." These cases come down the line with D.A.H. marked on their sick report, and they have been asked so often if they felt dizzy, short of breath on exertion, that the symptoms, diagnosis, and treatment are given by the men before a question is asked. These cases continually fall out of drill, complaining of some heart symptom, but on examination in the majority of cases nothing abnormal is discovered. The medical officer, after verification of my statement, explains to the men the necessity of exercise for their heart condition. It is evident that there must be some reason for the diagnosis, even though no heart condition is present in the greater number of cases when they arrive in this depot. On inquiring into these cases I learn that the majority have been sent down after some forced march, hard push, etc., and I have come to the conclusion that there was some dilatation, and the men suffering from this reported sick. On the regimental medical officer's examination, a true heart condition was found, and the men were sent down the line to a hospital. Being no true lesion, the heart returned to normal after a few days' rest, and after a month in hospital and convalescent home it is evident the heart will be normal on reaching this depot. The man had been questioned so much regarding his heart, it is only natural he would be afraid of exercise. These cases should not be marked D.A.H., but an "exhausted heart," and three or four days in a rest camp would be quite sufficient treatment for the majority. There are, however, numerous true heart lesions, and they are given special exercises and marching depending on their condition. Little time is spent on these cases, and if they do not respond to treatment they are boarded (Classified).

I found numerous cases which needed special exercises and massage, so I fitted out a department with what apparatus I could find, and trained three masseurs in therapeutic exercises. The type of cases given to this department are flat feet, nerve lesions, adhesions of joints, certain muscular weakness following operations, etc.; in fact, any condition which required special massage and manipulation. In the majority of cases the exercises are

Digitized by Google

of the ordinary nature, and the treatment would be evident to any physical director, but there are special features in certain cases which are interesting to note.

It is a curious fact that a wound in the scapula, chest, and upper arm, in the region of the shoulder joint, frequently left a temporary paralysis of the arm on the side involved. The opinion of the majority of the medical men is that it is due to a shock to the brachial plexus. These cases are extremely hard to diagnose accurately, for there are so many points to be considered. To illustrate: A man is wounded in one of these regions. The wound is immediately dressed and a fixation or bandage applied. On removing the bandage weeks later, the man is unable to move his shoulder, arm, fingers to any extent. The question arises, is it due to shock to the brachial plexus, a direct nerve injury, muscular weakness, adhesions of the joint, or a combination of two or more of these? These cases require a great deal of attention, the recovery is slow, and the treatment from the physical standpoint depends on the diagnosis. The treatment in the majority of these cases is similar to those given in anterior poliomyelitis. Club swinging and massage are used to a great extent in breaking down adhesions and toning up the muscles. A chart of each case is kept, and this is a great help in noting the recovery of movement and encourages the man to try and increase each day's effort over the preceding one.

Massage alone is a much-overrated treatment. To let a man lie on a table and be massaged and then expect a quick recovery is expecting the impossible. These men require active more than passive treatent, and a combination of both is the ideal method.

The work now needed is to institute some form of exercise in every place where wounded or convalescing men are gathered. To be prepared for that time, I have started a training school for physical instructors, and have thirteen men taking the course at the present time.

To summarize: Approximately twenty-five hundred men, officers, N.C.O.'s, and other ranks, do this drill, one or more times daily in two hospitals, two convalescent homes, and two command depots. Many officers have taken the exercise book with them, and have said they will do this work with their company. The value of physical training for the wounded is being realized as the necessary treatment for a quick recovery.

Digitized by Google

The Y.M.C.A. has been of vast service in rendering valuable skilled knowledge of the kind, and when the war has passed away, and the conditions of peace are resumed, the lesson learnt by many who have come in contact with modern physical education is not likely to be lost.

The following report throws a flood of light on the methods of those who conduct the American Y.M.C.A. It will be observed that the report is that of a Commission appointed to inquire into the physical health of the Secretaries of the Association during life.

In passing, it might be well to ask oneself how many business firms or organizations, or how many Government Institutions on the face of the globe, take this trouble.

COMMISSION REPORT, ATLANTIC CITY, SEPT. 1916, ON THE PHYSICAL LIFE OF INTERNATIONAL SECRETARIES

Introduction

The health statistics of the United States show that while the death rate as a whole is being lowered, this result is achieved through the gratifying decline in the mortality of children, while the death rate among persons over fifty years of age is increasing.

The three most prominent causes of this increase are improper food and habits of eating, lack of suitable exercise, and over-work.

The diminished death rate among children is very largely due to more intelligence and greater care in the feeding of infants and children, but no corresponding improvement has been made in the feeding of adults. Dishes are prepared to please the palate rather than nourish the body. Very little pains are taken to secure a proper balance between the fat, starches, and proteids, and the brans and coarser elements of food are so carefully eliminated that nearly one-half of all adults of sedentary habits are suffering from constipation, with its attendant evils. The greater part of all this is preventable if we would but take the

Digitized by Google

pains to inform ourselves on the subject, and then would practise what we learn. In the matter of diet, the children fare better than adults, because they are not left to decide for themselves, but their mothers or nurses decide for them.

The importance of physical exercise in maintaining health is so constantly emphasized in the Association Brotherhood that there is no need to enlarge upon it here, though it is second only to food in its influence on life and health.

The danger to health from over-work has been less emphasized, and for this reason we desire to give it especial emphasis at this time. Much of the increase in the death rate of those who are over fifty years of age is due to diseases resulting from the strain placed upon the physical life of men and women owing to the conditions under which business and professional work is now carried on. The problem confronting an organization like this, which is seeking to preserve the physical efficiency of its personnel, is "How can the organization so arrange its work as to prevent the breakdown of men between forty and fifty and to conserve the ripe experience and the judgment of men over fifty, who are likely to be laid aside because of wrong habits of work contracted in earlier years."

In seeking a solution of this problem, let us consider:

I. In what respects is the physical life of a Secretary of the International Committee subjected to greater strain than that of most other men bearing similar responsibilities?

(1) He is ordinarily obliged to engage in considerable public speaking, and this is a most exhausting form of work.

(2) He is required to undertake addresses on Sunday when business men ordinarily are free, and many of his conferences are scheduled for the evening.

(3) Owing to the increase in conferences held during the summer, it becomes difficult for the International Secretary to get satisfactory vacations.

One Student Secretary reports: "In the student work it is the rule rather than the exception for those who have any gifts on evangelistic lines, and most all have, to start the day with meeting a committee of workers at six or six-thirty in the morning, and to run through until eleven and twelve at night with interviews and meetings. If a Secretary can get one meal time when he can sit down and eat without having an address to some fraternity or some other group hanging over him, he is

Digitized by Google

lucky. It is not easy to get an hour off for exercise, and if he insists on an hour after dinner for a sleep he is certainly taking it easy. When men are clamouring for interviews and are so disappointed if they cannot see the Secretary, and they will not go to anyone else, it is an awful temptation to yield, even with the firm resolve that in the next campaign the schedule will not be so strenuous.

"In such work, I have not yet seen how a man can save himself while in the campaign, and still be efficient. He must, however, have more time free from responsibility and should be compelled to take longer vacations. I know that the cause of my breakdown was due more to the failure to take one day in seven than to any other cause."

II. What are some of the characteristic signs by which International Secretaries reveal their lack of mastery of the physical conditions under which they live?

(1) As Secretaries grow older, there is characteristic overweight.

(2) In many cases Secretaries show in their countenances and in their movements, and sometimes in their voices, the lack of repose which characterizes men who are laying heavier burdens upon their physical system than it is able to bear.

(3) Owing, sometimes, to conscientious objections to various forms of amusement, to lack of early opportunities for physical recreation through games, or to the pressure of engagements, Secretaries do not take adequate time for recreation and that change of work without which the strain cannot be borne.

(4) Owing to the fact that some of the leaders in the Association Movement are endowed with unusual physical powers, other men less able to stand strain take their cue as to work from these men, and attempt to carry an amount of work which is beyond their strength.

III. Some suggestions as to methods of rendering more efficient the physical life of International Secretaries.

(1) Provision should be made for an annual physical examination, such as those conducted by the Life Extension Institute of New York, for every Secretary of the International Committee and possibly for every employee of the building. As these examinations are made from year to year, it would be possible to discover the early signs of deterioration and some breakdowns could be prevented. These can be secured at a minimum cost.

Digitized by Google

(2) There should be a conference in the autumn on the whole subject which should emphasize, among other things, the importance of right habits of eating, particularly while travelling, and should lay down the canons by which expenses are chargeable. The wide variation in expense accounts show that some Secretaries are trying to save so much that their physical efficiency is being endangered thereby.

(3) A study should be made of the outside work being carried by various Secretaries apart from their regular duties, with a view to ascertaining whether it is of a nature that will afford relaxation, or whether it will add to the physical strain. Sometimes such outside work can be so arranged as to make it helpful to the individual, and at the same time make the work itself more efficient.

(4) A study should be made of the methods of laying out schedules so as to avoid unnecessary travel on the part of Secretaries and also avoid expenses. It is doubtless true that Secretaries of the International Committee are travelling more miles each year than is necessary, owing to the lack of co-ordination in their schedules, and every extra mile that is travelled involves by so much an unnecessary strain upon the physical life of the men doing it.

(5) Somehow there must be gotten into the consciousness of Secretaries the realization that a breakdown from overwork is a positive disgrace. There is often a feeling that if a man breaks down, and is obliged to quit his work because he has been under too great a strain in connection with it, he is entitled to commendation as a martyr to the cause. So long as this foolish idea prevails, we shall have Secretaries breaking down in health.

(6) One of the chief causes for this over-strained condition is lack of foresight in planning engagements. It happens that a Secretary will agree to be at a certain place six months from the date when the engagement is made, and as time draws near he puts off preparation for the event, and when the time is actually upon him he is unexpectedly forced to take up other duties so as to rush breathlessly to the appointment poorly prepared for the engagement and physically under a great handicap. The Commission recommends strongly that Secretaries be encouraged to give more thought to planning their work and especially to check up their engagements each month. Secre-

Digitized by Google

taries must also attack their work with dispatch, application, and concentration so as to give more time for recreation.

(7) The question of vacations should be considered more seriously than at present. It is probable that much would be gained by a conference in mid-winter outlining the plans of the various departments for the summer conferences, so that provision would be made for satisfactory vacations in the summer, or, if this cannot be accomplished in every case, then for vacations at some other time of the year.

(8) As a minor suggestion, but one which might, in the long run, produce considerable results, we would recommend that much more thought be given to the luncheon facilities in the building, and that more care be given to the healthful qualities of the food, so that Secretaries who wish a light lunch of good materials can be accommodated. If opportunity were given for Secretaries to meet socially at lunch time, this also would be an advantage.

(9) It is desirable that the International Secretaries should cultivate more optimism with respect to their work. It is reported that when groups of Secretaries and their wives get together, the conversation often turns upon the hardship of the International Secretaries' lives. Such conversation creates a depressing atmosphere, particularly if it extends to homes. The Commission, of course, cannot comment extensively upon this phase of the question, but believes that herein lies a serious difficulty which reflects itself in the physical life of Secretaries.

(10) There is a feeling on the part of some that there should be established a higher grade of stenographic and clerical work in the offices so as to enable Secretaries, who are responsible for administrative work, to have more adequate clerical assistance. Much of the strain of office work is due to inadequate provision for filing, to careless stenographic work, to the fact that the Secretaries engaged on large administrative problems are constantly being compelled to turn aside from these to devote themselves to urgent but less important items of detail. The Commission recognizes that this may cost more, but inefficiency of service should not be permitted even if the cost of efficiency is a little greater, and in the long run a general elevation of the grades of service will be actually cheaper than the loss from inadequate service. It is just here that many of the Secretaries feel a sense of greatest strain, and they are convinced that the Committee's work

Digitized by Google

is suffering on this account. A thorough study of this subject, with the adoption of such changes as might be found advisable, would probably have a very decided influence upon the physical life of the International Secretaries. Secretaries must learn to leave their work at the office and not carry it into their homes and on their nervous systems.

(11) Worry and fretting make great inroads upon efficiency and physical vitality. One member of the International Committee refers to the anxiety brought about by stress and strain in personal finances, the inability to meet the interest due on borrowed funds, the worry over exigencies which demand unexpected funds. These are due largely to unbusiness-like transactions, though sometimes they are unavoidable. He has helped Secretaries in such exigencies. He recommends that the International Committee appoint a committee to help Secretaries in such exigencies so as to relieve them of the strain incident thereto.

Conclusion

The Commission recognizes that in any serious business there is bound to be much outgiving of physical energy, and that no movement of this kind can succeed unless, in a real sense, men are willing to lay down their lives for it. Provided this sacrifice is due to the necessity of the work, it is probably justified, but it is not justified when due to lack of foresight in accepting engagements, inadequate provision for vacations, wrong habits of living, unwillingness to take time for recreation, and the attempt to imitate the working schedules of other men. It is impossible for the International Committee or for any Commission, no matter how well constructed, to do more than make a few suggestions. Ultimately the question rests with the individual Secretary. The Committee can make certain provision for a Secretary's needs; it can advise him as to the policy to be pursued, but no one but himself, ultimately, can save him from the results of his own folly.

A number of Secretaries have worked out successful methods of daily exercise, such as Mr. Morse has been using for years, viz. "The Roberts' Drill," and several others use "My System" by Mueller. The Commission advises some form of systematic exercise and hygienic regime. This regime will naturally differ in different cases. The Commission advises

Digitized by Google

the careful reading and study of the book *How to Live*, by Fisher and Fisk.

The Commission wishes to record its belief that no real progress can be made in achieving physical efficiency on the part of the individual Secretary, unless he is willing to devote time and study to the subject of personal hygiene. No mere casual reading of miscellaneous health hints will give him the information necessary for carrying out a programme looking to the maintenance of physical life on a high plane. Like every other subject, it must be studied carefully to attain even ordinary proficiency. On the other hand, care should be taken not to consider morbidly one's symptoms and give over-emphasis to minor physical ills. It is well known that a man can easily become physically morbid through reading a certain class of literature. There is a happy medium which can be discovered through courageous thinking and willingness to bring to bear ordinary intelligence upon the problems of personal physical life.

The Commission in closing wishes to call attention to the need of that spiritual repose and faith which enable a man to look upon the problems of his life and work calmly, and with faith in the final outcome. If his life is pure and his aspirations holy, and his faith unlimited, he will find these qualities of the spiritual life greatly advancing his physical vigour and nurture.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XV

FINANCE

One of the most frequent comments on the work of the Y.M.C.A. made by those who are not informed of the nature of its activities is that it is "a money-making concern." How such an idea can enter the minds of the educated it is difficult to understand, but the fact remains that I have seen a letter written by a senior official in the Egyptian Government service, in which the Y.M.C.A. was so described. I feel inclined, by reason of this misconception, to state the case at some little length and with care, so that there may be no possibility of misunderstanding.

It is usual to describe institutions as money-making concerns when they make profits for the benefit of those who conduct them. We find, on the other hand, that institutions conducted for the public welfare, such as hospitals, charge fees to some of their patients, and employ officials, who are paid salaries of varying amount; in some hospitals even the medical staff receive some payment. The resident staff and medical superintendent are usually paid (and sometimes the so-called honorary practitioner); yet I have never heard the term "money-making" applied to a hospital.

It is clear that those who conduct philanthropic enterprises must live. Tradesmen and others who supply them with goods expect to be paid, landlords in whose houses they live expect that the rent will be

Digitized by Google

met, and it is clear some provision must be made to meet these essential demands. Let us then enquire into the Y.M.C.A. work in Egypt from the economic point of view.

In the first instance, when the army was not well organized, when staff was insufficient, and when amateur assistance of all kinds was invoked and welcome, the Y.M.C.A. set up a series of canteens to meet the wants of the men. They gauged the wants of these men far better than anyone else, because their Secretaries usually see more of the men, and understand them better than other people, and a very large canteen business became rapidly established. The business became so extensive, and the amount handled so considerable, that it became obvious that the matter must be placed on a sound business footing, and Mr. Arthur Johnson, O.B.E., was sent by the British Y.M.C.A. to help in the matter. For a number of years before the war, Mr. Johnson voluntarily represented the English National Council in the Midland District of England, raising money and organizing. When war was declared, he threw himself into war work, and was responsible for the East Midlands. In December 1915 he was sent to Egypt to assist in the business side of the work, and he has had charge of this work ever since. The Y.M.C.A. advanced him a sum of money in order to effect the necessary purchases, and from the fact that he was able to make purchases in the market as opportunity offered, with the resources of the Association behind him, he was able to anticipate the rise in prices of things the soldiers required, and to purchase long beforehand. As the rise in prices steadily continued, and as the operations increased, the result has been that the Y.M.C.A. as a body has made a considerable profit on the sale of

Digitized by Google

the goods. At the same time, as the prices paid by the soldiers have generally been considerably below the prices asked by anyone else, it may well be asked what would have happened if prices had moved in the other direction. It is of course obvious that the Y.M.C.A. would have suffered a loss. As, however, the policy of the Y.M.C.A. Council has been to cut down prices wherever possible, to supply goods as cheaply as possible and to keep only the margin of profit necessary for safety, the soldier has reaped the greater part of this advantage.

As time has passed on the army itself took up the question of supplies, and the E.E.F. Canteens now extend everywhere; wherever there is an E.E.F. Canteen a Y.M.C.A. Canteen goes out of the canteen business, and limits itself to supplying prepared foods, tea, cocoa, coffee, and the like, which the official canteen does not usually provide. The enormous turnover enables a substantial sum to be set aside at the end of the year, notwithstanding the low prices at which these articles are sold. The profits made in this way could not, and did not, suffice to cover much of the expenditure. The expenditure on huts, on material, on games and the like is dead loss from a business point of view, and but for the liberal donations that have latterly been received from Great Britain, Australia, New Zealand, and America, the Y.M.C.A. work could not have been undertaken.

Now let us see what becomes of the money?

The Secretaries of the Y.M.C.A. are paid at the rate of £40 a year, their keep and travelling expenses—that is, the English Secretaries. The British soldier receives £24 a year, his keep and travelling expenses, so that the pay of a Y.M.C.A. Secretary in the field is £16 a

Digitized by Google

year better than that of the British private. The Australian Secretary receives £150 and £50 a year for maintenance, but is not so highly paid as the Australian N.C.O. The General Secretary and the Business Manager are paid by the International Committee in America and by the British Y.M.C.A., and are more adequately paid for what is their life work. Whether the business side of the Y.M.C.A. makes a big profit or whether it makes a loss, there is no difference in the sum received by any of the workers.

The Y.M.C.A. War Work Committee definitely decided by resolution that whatever profit, if any, remained over from the canteen work at the end of the war, should be devoted to the interests of the soldiers and sailors who have taken part in the war. In the Appendix (VI) the financial particulars are set out at length.

In all these circumstances then, how entirely unjust and unreasonable it seems to describe the Y.M.C.A. as a money-making concern!

The policy of the Y.M.C.A. has been to arrange canteens for the sale of articles the soldier is known to require, wherever they can be placed, but there are occasions and there are places where this becomes impossible, and in these circumstances they have not hesitated to make extensive free distributions. But in general the feeling has been strongly against the free distribution of goods, on the ground that it is better for the material well-being and morale of the soldier that he should purchase what he wants, and not, in a sense, however remote, be the recipient of a charity. There is something unsatisfactory in the policy of appealing to the public for subscriptions which are expended in doles of chocolates, cigarettes, and the like. If it is right and proper that the man should have

Digitized by Google

these things, then it is right and proper that the Government should issue them, but if they are to be regarded as extras, and not due from the Government, then surely it is sound policy to see that they can be purchased at the lowest possible prices.

There is also a practical side of the matter. Let us suppose there are 200,000 men and £50,000 has been raised, and it is determined to expend it in the purchase of comforts; each soldier would then receive 5*s*. worth :—an issue would be made of cigarettes, chocolate, a handkerchief, some writing paper and a pencil, and in one day the whole £50,000 might be expended, and leave behind it no effective residuum. On the other hand, £50,000 spent in huts, pianos, books, magazines, swimming baths, and the like would furnish a vast amount of opportunity for social employment on the part of the men for an indefinite period. But the latter policy requires a staff to carry it into effect. There is no difficulty in purchasing cigarettes and chocolates, and distributing them; there is considerable difficulty in satisfactorily running a hut or club, and providing continued and varied entertainment for the men, but it is this humane policy that tells.

Furthermore, the free distribution of goods always causes some dissatisfaction. Men do not get exactly the same articles as some of their fellows, and often think the distributing agency is not generous.

When I was administering the Australian Red Cross in Egypt, I found that there was reason to think that some of the soldiers disposed of their issue to the Arabs and employed the money as they pleased, and I gradually reached the conviction that, with some reserves, the Red Cross should be run on the same principle. I then tried as far as possible to use the Red Cross funds

Digitized by Google

for the erection of huts, libraries, and the like in the various hospitals, and there to provide entertainment on a liberal scale. It is not possible, of course, to make arrangements for the purchase of goods by a man who is seriously ill, and in that case it seemed to me better to pass the Red Cross goods to the Quartermaster's Store, and have them issued by the hospital in the ordinary way. All the evidence was against the policy of indiscriminate free issue of goods. It is like so many other social proposals, an attempt to seek a short cut where no short cut exists. Whatever may be the ultimate policy adopted during this campaign, the policy I have indicated has been that followed by the Y.M.C.A. in Egypt. It is this policy which has been carried into effect by Mr. Jessop, the General Secretary of the Y.M.C.A., acting under the direction of the Executive and Finance Committee, the names of which appear in Chapter V, page 40, and of which Mr. Monteith-Smith of the Ministry of the Interior is the chairman, and Mr. Grainger-Stewart of the National Bank of Egypt is the Honorary Treasurer.

Finally a still larger question of Y.M.C.A. policy looms up. It will be seen from the preceding chapter that the Y.M.C.A. has ministered to the social wants of the men who are well, providing them with some extra comforts over and above those the Government thinks it right to furnish, but it has in addition, during the campaign in Egypt, frequently attended to the wants of the sick as well. The latter function has been in the main discharged by the Red Cross, British and Australian Branches, but in 1918 the Red Cross did not have the personnel to undertake the work, and in the desert the Y.M.C.A., being on the spot, and having the staff, could more easily cope with some of

Digitized by Google

the work. The alliance entered into between the Australian Branch British Red Cross and the Y.M.C.A. in 1915 appeared to me to be perfectly sound in principle.

In a hospital, it is obvious that the patients should be properly looked after by the Red Cross, but the Red Cross is not the proper body to attend to the wants of hospital orderlies or nurses, if the Geneva Convention is to be strictly enforced. The difficulty accentuates itself when the Convalescent Homes are dealt with, and still more so when Soldiers' Clubs such as the Esbekieh are considered. These clubs are frequented by convalescents in large numbers, and by still larger numbers of healthy men. It seemed to me the policy adopted in 1915 was sound, to make an arrangement with the Y.M.C.A. so that the work was divided between the Red Cross and the Y.M.C.A. The attempt to run such a business in compartments is ludicrous, even if it were not impossible. My experience of the combination between the Y.M.C.A. and the Australian Branch of the British Red Cross was an entirely satisfactory one, as subsequent arrangements have been between the British Red Cross and the Y.M.C.A. for convalescent outings.

If now we turn our eyes from what has occurred to the future, it does seem to me that the Red Cross and the Y.M.C.A. should be recognized as the chief, if not the sole, agencies for discharging their respective functions, that they should be organized as they are in times of peace, as either entirely or largely independent bodies, but on declaration of war they should be incorporated as part of the Army reserve; that their management should be attached to the Staff of the Commander-in-Chief in the field, and that they should be administered

Digitized by Google

as an Auxiliary Army Branch—in other words, occupy officially the definite position they have come gradually to occupy unofficially.

The position is now a little anomalous. The Red Cross workers receive honorary rank, and consequently travel on the railways at special rates, and enjoy other advantages. The Australian Y.M.C.A. workers are also to receive honorary rank, but the British workers do not receive honorary rank, and the Y.M.C.A. workers have up till now received no concession on the Egyptian State railways, which means simply that the subscriptions of the British public are employed in part to pay full fares on the Egyptian State railways. All these petty anachronisms and crudities would be avoided if the comprehensive policy here indicated was carried out.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XVI

CONCLUSION

DURING the greater part of the last four years I have been more or less in daily contact with the Y.M.C.A. work. I have attended many meetings of the Finance and Executive Committee, I have inspected the work in many parts of Egypt and Palestine, usually where I have been known, but sometimes where I have not been known. It has been my fortune to act practically as a *liaison* officer between the Army Medical Service and the Y.M.C.A., ascertaining for the Army Medical Service whether certain undertakings could be placed in the hands of the Y.M.C.A., and on the other hand ascertaining whether certain proposed actions on the part of the Y.M.C.A. would be agreeable to the Army Medical Service.

The Chairman of the Executive Committee, Mr. Monteith-Smith, and the Honorary Treasurer, Mr. Grainger-Stewart, are essentially men of business, and naturally a Committee containing such representatives is essentially businesslike in its methods. The characteristic which lives most strongly in memory, however, is the fact that I have never yet heard from any Committee or from any worker connected with the Y.M.C.A. any objection to attempting any new proposal simply on the grounds that it gave trouble, or because it was new. Once they were assured that the Service

Digitized by Google

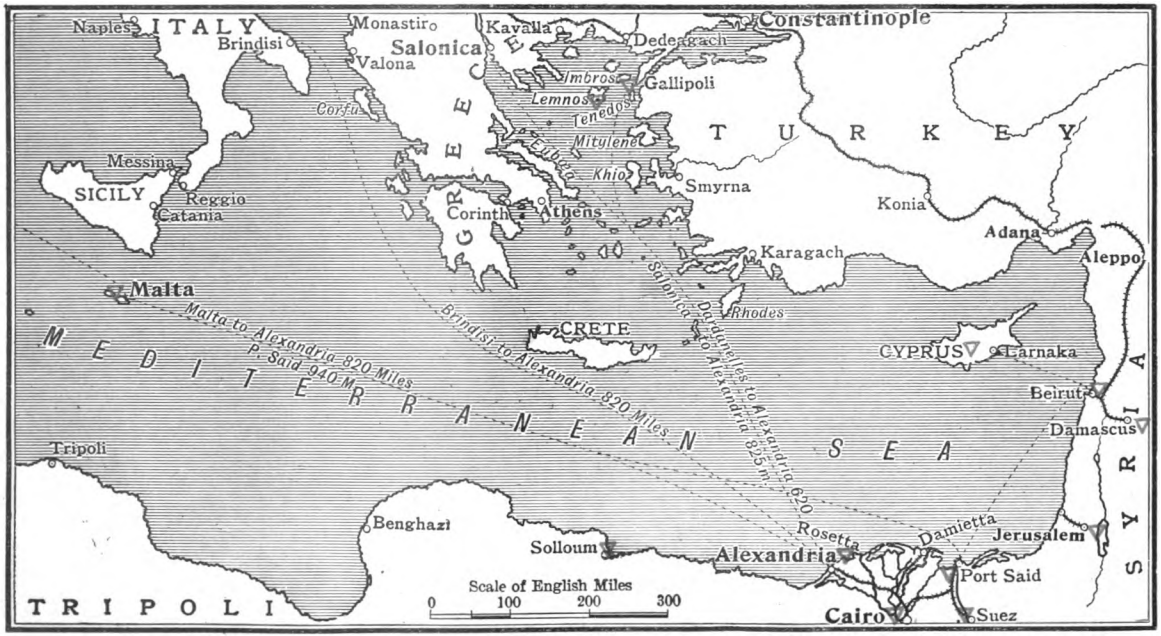
desired it, it was simply a question of ways and means. It is this ready acquiescence in developmental work, the spirit of absolute loyalty to the cause, and the unsparing gift of their own services which has marked it to me as essentially a business and philanthropic institution. When the war comes to an end, the strain on the Y.M.C.A. will be greater than ever, because during the waiting period prior to demobilization the men freed from all but military duty will have a good deal of time on their hands, and it is then that the Y.M.C.A. will require all its resources, all its energy, and all its enlightenment to surmount the difficulty. It is not my business to discuss fully now what it may and what it will probably do, but amongst its various activities it will certainly have to undertake certain educational work for the men who are waiting to demobilize, and it will certainly have to keep these men interested, occupied, and to a certain extent healthily amused. About that which lies beyond demobilization there is ample time for future discussion, but I shall be very much mistaken in my judgment of the men with whom I have been associated in the Y.M.C.A. for the last four years if we do not find that the Y.M.C.A., like so many other institutions and organizations, will have had its outlook profoundly altered by the bitter experience of the war.

The day has passed when it is possible for individuals unaided to accomplish great things. Team work is essentially necessary if the long view of life be taken, and team work is never likely to succeed unless the morality of the team is high, and unless the team has a clear vision of the end desired. The strength, in my judgment, of this organization lies in the fact that its members possess an ideal which finds expression in

Digitized by Google

services to their fellows of the most practical character, and, whether it is obvious or whether it is not obvious, their actions are invariably coloured by devotion to a definite purpose. Whether we shall all agree with their ideal in the abstract or not is outside the question, for all can join in admiring and respecting their single-minded efforts to better humanity.

Digitized by Google



MAP OF THE EASTERN MEDITERRANEAN.

To face page 194]

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

APPENDIXES

APPENDIX I

SHORT PARTICULARS OF Y.M.C.A. CENTRES WITH THE TROOPS IN EGYPT AND THE NEAR EAST—MARCH 21, 1916

CAIRO DISTRICT

Head-quarters—St. David's Buildings

	Secretaries.
General Secretary . . .	W. Jessop
General Work	W. W. Sant
Office	S. N. Barling (Eng.)
Inquiry Bureau	Sister Lucie Owen
Trading Department . . .	A. H. Johnson (Eng.)
.	R. Heams (Eng.)
	L. Gascoigne (Eng.)

EZBEKIEH GARDENS

Soldiers' Recreation Club. Open-air Skating Rink leased by Y.M.C.A. Reading, writing, and full postal facilities. Cinema and all kinds of entertainments and sports. Stationery given free as in all centres—about 25,000 sheets and envelopes weekly. 3,000 letters posted daily and up to 2,000 men in club at one time. Refreshments in charge of New Zealand and other ladies. Average £120 daily .	J. L. Hay (N.Z.)

Digitized by Google

Hostel	Secretaries.
Cairo Bourse Building—accommodation for 350 men . . .	G. W. Shapley (Aus.) J. J. Donnelly (Aus.) T. Jones (Aus.)
Luna Park Hospital	
Mat Hut	A. J. Grace (Egypt) J. Brown (Austr.)
Bulac Dacrur Convalescent Hospital	
Worker given every facility and very popular. Special arrangements for outings of the patients	
Abbassia Rest Camp	
Large Native Tent . . .	F. C. Ade (Eng.)
Dermatological Hospital	
Large Mat Hut	R. D. Downes (Eng.)
Racecourse Camp	
Large Mat Hut with refreshments .	F. Beaurapair (Aus.) A. M. Brown (Aus.)
Aerodrome Camp	
Large Mat Hut with refreshments .	H. Darvill (Eng.)
Zeitun, No. 1 Camp	
Mat Hut with Canteen in marquee .	J. Hanson (Eng.)
Zeitun, No. 2 Camp	
Large Mat Hut. In a separate hut Rev. Oswald Chambers (Eng.) holds a Bible Training College .	J. P. Hamilton (Eng.)
Giza (Australian Overseas Base Camp)	
Large Mat Hut with refreshments .	G. Green (Aus.)
The Base Post Office . . .	G. Smart (Aus.)

Digitized by Google

Mena, No. 1

	Secretaries.
Large Mat Hut	E. W. Hare (Eng.)

Mena, No. 2

Large Mat Hut	W. Higginson (Eng.)
Religious Campaign . . .	H. W. White (U.S.A.)

ALEXANDRIA DISTRICT

Central Building

Semi-permanent Building. All facilities. Large Restaurant. Daily: 1,800 eggs, 3,000 cups tea, 4,000 cakes, 90 loaves bread . .	S. Crouch (U.S.A.) H. Crouch (Aus.)

Mustapha Barracks

Very fine Frame Building . .	B. C. James (Eng.) A. J. White (Eng.)

Mex Camp

Buildings from military, etc. .	C. L. Webb (Eng.)

Sidi Bishr

Large Mat Hut with refreshments .	C. Harbridge (Eng.) E. H. Holland (Eng.)
Group of three huts. Assembly Hall Reading and Writing . .	J. H. Boyd J. W. Acheson E. E. Eldor W. P. Gilmor American Mission workers

Ras-el-Tin Convalescent Hospital

Building	Dr. S. H. Kennedy (Egypt)

CANAL ZONE

Port Said

City Building and Marquee in Camp Refreshments	D. Couper (Eng.) V. Watson (Eng.) W. P. Hancock (Eng.)

Digitized by Google

	Secretaries.
TEL-EL-KEBIR	
Two large Mat Huts—refreshments	W. Owens (Aus.) E. Cliffen (Aus.) F. E. Wright (Aus.)
ISMAILIA	
Moascar Camp. One large Mat Hut, (2) Large Wooden Hut. Cinema and usual features . . .	W. A. Hislop (N.Z.) L. Baumgart (N.Z.) P. M. Velvin (N.Z.) F. H. Wilkinson (N.Z.)
Town. Three rooms in E.G.M. .	C. T. King (Mission)
SUEZ	
Soldiers' Club in Greek School. Formerly Military Head-quarters but handed to us. All forms of recreation and facilities. Restaurant	J. S. Whate (Eng.) P. E. Hubbell (Eng.)
KANTARA	
Two large Marquees . . .	H. R. Veale (Eng.) D. MacDonald (Eng.)
SERAPEUM	
Marquee	R. R. Way (Aus.)

WESTERN FRONTIER

MERSA MATRUH	
Marquee and equipment . .	E. A. Claxton (Eng.)
WARDAN	
Two large Marquees with refreshments	G. H. Marsden (Eng.) H. J. Towner (Eng.)
FAYOUM	
Two Marquees and equipment .	A. H. Griffiths (Eng.)

Digitized by Google

BENHA

	Secretaries.
Tea rooms, etc.	American Mission

ASYUT

Rooms in American Mission College.	American Mission

PROPOSED NEW CENTRES

Ballah, Canal
El Ferdan, Canal
Port Tewfik, Canal (West Bank)
El Shallufa, Canal (East Bank)
Geneffe, Canal (East Bank)
Kubri, Canal (East Bank)
El Shatt, Canal (East Bank)

APPENDIX II

LADIES WHO HAVE ASSISTED MRS. DUNN, MRS. BEARD, AND MISS GREENHORNE AT THE ESBEKIEH

Mrs. Adams.
Mrs. Aikenhead.
Mrs. Aldworth.
Mrs. Alexander.
Miss Allen.
Mrs. Amis.
Miss Antony.
Miss Arbuthnott.
Mrs. Archer.
Mrs. Aswad.
Mrs. Ayden.
Lady Babtie.
Miss Ballantine.
Mrs. Bankhead-Brown.
Miss Bayley.
Mrs. Bayni-Fardine.
Miss Bedoe.
Miss Benani.
Mrs. Benani.
Mrs. Bence-Trower.
Mrs. Bennett.
Mrs. Benton.
Mrs. Berdie.
Mrs. Bezeley.
Miss Bigger.
Miss Bixby.
Mrs. Blanchard.
Mrs. Blunt.
Mrs. W. S. Blunt.
Mrs. Bowden Smith.
Miss Boyd-Carpenter.
Mrs. Boyd-Carpenter.
Miss Braine-Harnall.
Miss Bridge.
Miss Bunnie.
Mrs. Burns.
Mrs. Burton.
Mrs. Bury.
Mrs. Cairns.
Mr. and Mrs. Campbell.
Mrs. Carter.
Mrs. and Miss Chisholm.
Mrs. Christian.
Miss Clarke.
Mrs. Close.
Mrs. Colley.
Mrs. Collins.
Miss Conquest.
Mrs. de Cosson.
Mrs. Creagh.
Mrs. Crowther.
Mrs. Cunningham.
Lady Curtis.
Miss Dalin.
Mrs. Dallin.
Miss Danby.
Mrs. Day.
Mrs. Datton.
Mrs. Davidson.
Mrs. Dawnay.
Miss Delabney.
Miss Delacroix.
Miss Dent.
Miss Dick.
Mrs. Dickin.
Mrs. Drake.
Mrs. Dray.
Mrs. Dudgeon.
Mrs. Dumford.
Mrs. Dunbar.
Mrs. Dunsford.
Mrs. Dyring.
Mrs. Edgar.
Mrs. Elder.
Mrs. Eldon-Scott.
Mrs. Elliott.
Miss Ester.
Mrs. Ester.

Digitized by Google

Mrs. Fischer.
Miss Forrest.
Mrs. Foster.
Mrs. Fraser.
Mrs. Gerrard.
Mrs. and Miss Gilmour.
Miss Glass.
Mrs. Goadby.
Miss Gottlieb.
Lady Graham.
Mrs. Graves.
Miss Gretton.
Miss Gunn.
Mrs. Gunn.
Mrs. Gunter.
Mrs. Haig.
Mrs. Hamilton.
Mrs. Hammond.
Miss Harding.
Miss Harrison.
Mrs. Hartley.
Mrs. Hayter.
Mrs. Hicks.
Miss Higgins.
Miss Hindmarsh.
Miss Hoare.
Mrs. Hooker.
Miss Horan.
Mrs. Horan.
Mrs. Hornblower.
Mrs. Horton.
Mrs. Hubbard.
Mrs. Hughes.
Mrs. Hunter.
Mrs. Hurst.
Mrs. Hutchinson.
Mrs. Hutton.
Mrs. James.
Mrs. Jeffereys.
Mrs. Jessop.
Mrs. Johnson.
Mrs. Johnson.
Mrs. Kenny.
Sister Kerr.
Mrs. and Miss Kahyat.
Miss King.
Miss Knaggs.
Miss Langley.
Miss de Lavison.
Mrs. Legatt.
Miss Leigh.
Mrs. Line.
Mrs. Liddell.
Mrs. Lloyd.
Mrs. Logan.
Miss Logan.
Miss E. Lucchesi.
Miss Lucchesi.
Miss McConchie.
Mrs. McDonald.
Mrs. McInnes.
Mrs. Mackenzie.
Mrs. Mackworth.
Mrs. Macrae.
Mrs. Madden.
Miss Maillet.
Mrs. Marquand.
Mrs. Marsh.
Mrs. Martin.
Miss Mathews.
Mrs. McPherson.
Mrs. Measures.
Miss Mellins.
Mrs. Metzger.
Mrs. Miller.
Miss Milne.
Mrs. Moberly.
Miss Moffatt.
Miss Molesworth.
Mrs. Monson.
Mrs. Moon.
Miss Moore.
Mrs. Morgan Jones.
Miss Morrison.
Mrs. Morrison.
Miss Mosseri.
Mrs. Murch.
Miss Neilson.
Mrs. Newland.
Mrs. Nisbet.
Mrs. Nixon.
Mrs. Norton.
Mrs. Orange.
Mrs. Owens.
Mrs. Palmer.
Mrs. Pawling.
Mrs. Paxton.
Mrs. Pegon.
Mrs. Pennell.
Mrs. Percival.
Miss Place.
Miss E. Place.
Miss Plummer.
Mrs. Plummer.
Miss Pollard.
Miss Power.
Mrs. Purvis.
Lady Quenington.
Miss Quibbell.
Mrs. Rankin.
Miss de Re.
Miss Rhys.
Mrs. Richards.
Miss Richardson.
Mrs. Roberts.
Mrs. Robertson.
Mrs. Robinson.
Miss Roff.
Mrs. Rowlatt.
Miss Roy.
Mrs. Russell.
Miss Salmon.
Mrs. Sands.
Miss Saunders.
Miss Sayba.
Mrs. Douglas Scott.
Mrs. Seelly.
Mrs. Sharman.
Mrs. Simmonds.
Miss Simpson.
Mrs. Sinclair.
Mrs. Smart.
Mrs. G. Smith.
Mrs. S. Smith.
Miss Snow.
Miss Spiers.
Miss Spon.
Mrs. Stafford.
Mrs. Stammers.
Mrs. Stevens.
Mrs. Stillwell.
Mrs. Stirling.

Digitized by Google

Mrs. Stokes.
Mrs. Stricher.
Mrs. Swallow.
Mrs. Swift.
Mrs. Teall.
Mrs. Thomson.
Miss Tippetts.
Miss Toohey.
Mrs. Tothill.
Mrs. Townsend.
Mrs. Trappand.
Mrs. Tree.
Mrs. Trelawny.
Mrs. Troubridge.
Mrs. Walton.
Mrs. Ward.
Mrs. Watchelet.
Mrs. A. Watson.
Mrs. Frank Watson.
Miss Wentzel.
Mrs. Westropp.
Mrs. White.
Mrs. Whyte.
Miss Whytehead.
Mrs. William.
Mrs. Willsallon.
Miss Wilson.
Miss Wingfield.
Miss E. Wingfield.
Mrs. Wood.
Mrs. Woods.
Miss Wyatt.
Miss Wylde.
Miss Young.
Mrs. Zwemer.

APPENDIX III

APPROXIMATE LIST OF CENTRES DURING 1916

	Secretaries.
Cairo:	
Head-quarters	W. Jessop S. N. Barling.
Trading Dept.	A. H. Johnson R. W. Heams L. W. Gascoigne
Inquiry Bureau	Sister Lucie Owen
Ezbekieh	A. Gillies F. Matheson
Anzac Hostel	G. W. Shapley T. E. Jones
Bulac Hospital	R. D. Downes
Australian Dermatological Hospital	R. D. Downes
Racecourse Camp	
Aerodrome Camp	
Zeitun, No. 1	J. Hanson
Zeitun, No. 2	
Mena, No. 1	W. Higginson
Mena, No. 2	E. W. Hare
Giza Australian Overseas Base	Gordon Green
Alexandria:	
Central	S. J. L. Crouch H. Crouch

Digitized by Google

ALEXANDRIA (*continued*):	Secretaries.
Mustapha . . .	
Sidi Bishr . . .	C. W. J. Harbridge
Sidi Bishr, Rest Camp .	American Mission
Mex	
Ras-el-Tin . . .	Dr. Kennedy
WESTERN FRONTIER:	
Mersa Matruh . .	R. B. Foster
Wadan . . .	
Fayoum, six centres .	A. H. Griffiths
Benha	
Asyut	
Sherika . . .	D. N. MacDiarmid
Kharga Oasis . .	J. C. Keyte
CANAL:	
Tel-el-Kebir. Three large huts . . .	A. J. Gibbs
Central Office, Ismailia, Head-quarters of W. Owens, R. R. Ways	C. Northway
Port Said . . .	D. Couper
Kantara West Stores .	R. J. Howie
Kantara Base . .	A. G. Robertson
Et Maler . . .	A. J. Gould
Duidar	
Hill 70	F. H. Wilkinson
Hill 40	
Mahamdia . . .	W. P. Mountain
Romani . . .	
Ballah	W. W. Sant
Ballybunion . . .	W. P. Hancock
Ferdan . . .	H. Handley
Ferdan Railhead . .	W. Adams
Ismailia . . .	Rev. Oswald Chambers
Ferry Post . . .	J. G. Robertson
Ferry Railhead . .	P. M. Velvin
Serapeum . . .	E. H. Macdonald
Serapeum Railhead .	
Kubri	
Kubri Railhead . .	D. Lyall

Digitized by Google

CANAL (*continued*):	Secretaries.
Geneffe	H. V. Smart
Shallufa West	J. L. Thorne
Shallufa East	R. A. Moodie
Shallufa Railhead	
Shallufa Salford	E. F. Pester
Suez	H. Darvill
Ayun Musa	F. H. Druery
	F. Pagdin
Moascar	A. W. Bradley
Cinemas	W. Boyd
	H. J. Turner

APPENDIX IV

CENTRES DURING 1917

Head-quarters, General Secretary	W. Jessop
Head-quarters, Business Secretary	A. H. Johnson
	S. N. Barling
	R. W. Heams
	J. B. Lockyer
Stores	L. W. Gascoigne
Anzac Hostel	G. W. Shapley
Esbekieh	A. Gillies
	F. Mathieson
P. of W. Camp	J. H. Crawford
Polygon	Capt. Seton Carr
Helwan	H. J. Towner
Zeitun	Rev. Oswald Chambers
	Mrs. Chambers
ALEXANDRIA:	
Central Building	Dr. S. H. Kennedy
	R. Agnew
Mustapha	W. Higginson
Abukir	R. D. Downes
Stores	J. B. Lockyer
BENHA	Miss Ashe
	Miss Ballinger

Digitized by Google

	Secretaries.
TANTA (American Mission)	
ASYUT	H. Darvill
FAYOUM	H. Darvill
KHARGA, ETC. . . .	H. Darvill
SUEZ TOWN AND CAMP	
ISMAILIA	
Station . . .	Miss Alexander
	Miss Eddy
Moascar . . .	A. W. Bradley
PORT SAID:	
Hostel	H. Handley
Rest Camp . . .	W. A. Hutchinson
	C. W. G. Smith
KANTARA	H. V. Smart
ROMANI	
EL ARISH (officers and men)	C. W. J. Harbridge
ABD AND MAZAR . . .	
RAFA (officers and men) .	J. B. Walker
Rest Camp . .	H. J. Towner
KHAN YUNIS (officers and men)	J. G. Robertson
BELAH (officers, men, and stores)	F. H. Druery
FIELD HEAD-QUARTERS . .	W. Owens
	R. R. Way
	A. T. Keens
Australian Flying Corps .	R. J. Howie

FRONT LINE AREA:

Centres were attached to Infantry and Mounted Brigades, numbers and locations of which cannot be disclosed: Infantry attached centres, 15; Mounted attached centres, 9; Flying Corps, 1.

SECRETARIES:

T. E. Jones	A. G. Robertson
W. Adams	E. H. Macdonald
P. M. Velvin	A. H. Griffiths
F. Pagdin	R. A. Moodie
W. P. Hancock	A. J. Gibbs
R. D. Downes	A. L. Anderson

R. Twigg

SUDAN . . . . In charge of D. N. MacDiarmid

Digitized by Google

APPENDIX V

CENTRES DURING 1918

CAIRO:	Secretaries.
General Head-quarters. General Secretary	W. Jessop
General Head-quarters. Office	S. N. Barling
Trading Dept. Business Secretary	A. H. Johnson R. W. Heams L. Gascoigne J. B. Lockyer C. A. Northway
Trading Dept. Stores	J. Simpson
Entertainments	C. W. Harbridge
Anzac Hostel	G. Shapley and Mrs. Shapley
Corner House	E. F. Pester
Esbekieh Gardens	V. A. Rule H. E. Grainger A. S. Kelly
Prisoners of War Camp, Heliopolis	J. H. Crawford
Polygon Camp	J. J. Rodgers
Helwan	A. H. Griffiths
School of Instruction, Zeitun	J. Hanson Mrs. Chambers and Ladies
Physical Director	G. G. Deaver, M.D.
ALEXANDRIA:	
Central Building	Dr. Kennedy R. Shoote
Mustapha Barracks	J. Irving
Aboukir	R. D. Downes C. C. Adams and Ladies
Sidi Bishr (Command Depot)	D. Corrall

Digitized by Google

	Secretaries.
ALEXANDRIA (*continued*):	
Physical work . .	A. Gillies
Stores	J. B. Lockyer
BENHA. Station Hut . .	H. Darvill
TEL-EL-KEBIR . . .	H. Darvill
ISMAILIA	W. P. Hancock and Mrs. Hancock
Station Hut . . .	
Moascar (Aust.) . .	A. W. Bradley B. Brown
Moascar (N.Z.) in course of erection.	
Indian Camp . .	J. H. Rawat
SUEZ. Town and Camp . .	A. J. Chambers
PORT SAID:	
Hostel	S. Smith
Bakery . . .	T. Tomlinson
D.M.C. Rest Camp . .	W. A. Hutchinson C. W. G. Smith
ASYUT. American Mission	
TANTA. American Mission	
KANTARA:	
West Stores . . .	J. L. Thorne
East Buildings (officers and men) . .	A. G. Robertson B. Pickford A. M'Laine
Indian Hut—Station .	J. H. Jensen
Indian Hut—Camp (2) .	S. Nasir
EL ARISH:	
Change of Air Camp with Hut and Cinema	H. Handley H. J. Towner E. G. Finch
LUDD:	
Station (officers, men, stores)	A. Cameron
Reinforcements Camp .	S. Donnithorne
Australian Flying Corps	A. J. Gibbs

Digitized by Google

JAFFA:	Secretaries.
Field Head-quarters .	W. Owens
	Mrs. Owens
	R. R. Way
	A. T. Keens
	J. W. Loats
Jaffa Hotel (officers) .	N. Mount
Hostel (late German Consulate) . . .	H. E. Kimpton
Cinema Hall . . .	H. E. Kimpton
Bakery . . .	F. Pagdin
Hostel—54th Division	
JERUSALEM:	
Office	R. S. Murray
Hostel	C. H. Crouch
	Miss Ashe
	Miss Eddy
Cinema Hall . . .	
Stores	
Bakery . . .	F. Pagdin
Reinforcements Camps .	G. G. Edwards
Sight-seeing parties .	J. B. Walker
	E. G. Parker
JERICHO. Stores . . .	

FRONT LINE AREA:

Centres attached to Infantry and Mounted Brigades, numbers and locations of which cannot be disclosed. Infantry attached centres, 12; Mounted attached centres, 9.

SECRETARIES:

R. Twigg	H. S. Eastwood
G. A. Hope	F. H. Druery
W. H. Pinson	R. G. Hunt
A. W. Hillard	T. E. Jones
A. L. Anderson	W. Adams
E. H. Macdonald	R. A. Moodie
P. M. Velvin	S. Greenhalgh

J. Finlay

Other Secretaries:

Prof. P. M. Brown, M.A., LL.D.

E. A. Wicher, D.D., P. C. Lal (Indian)

Digitized by Google

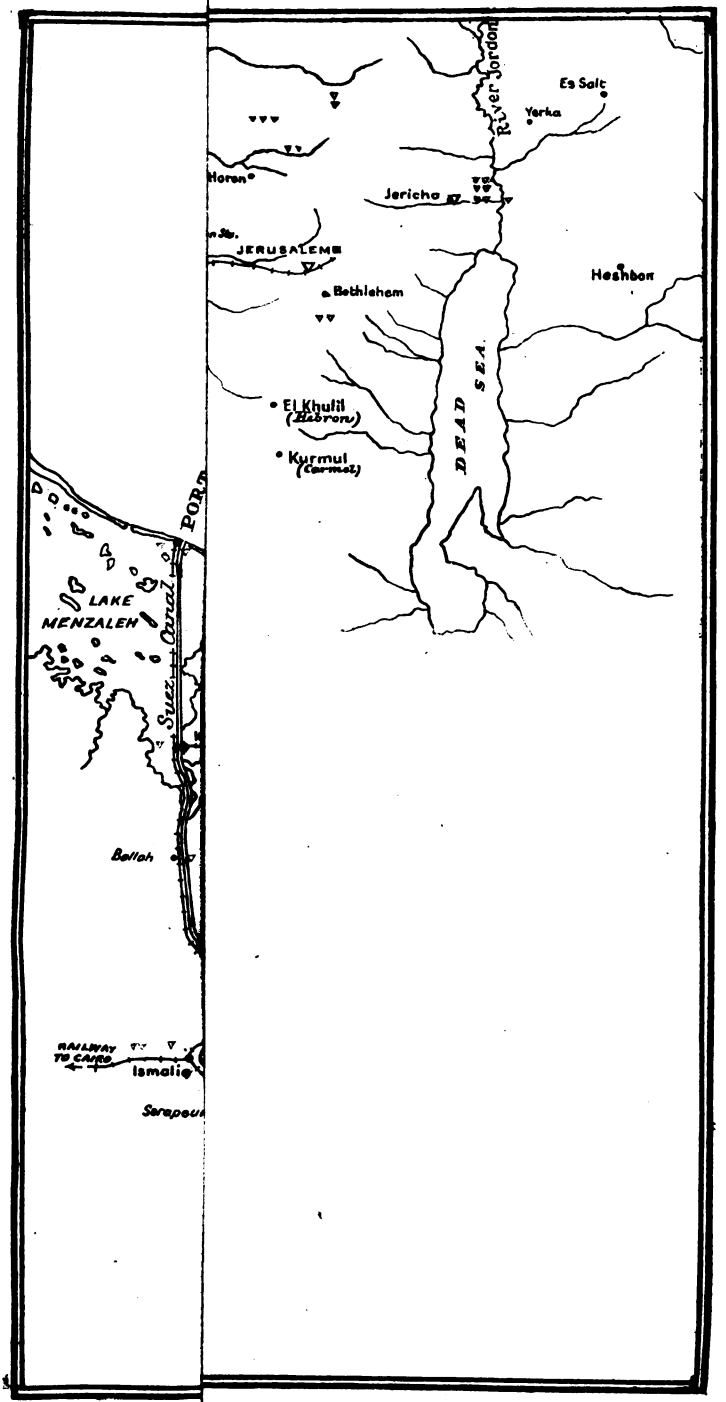
SECRETARIES—TOTAL

English . .	34	Inter. Committee .	5
Australian .	24	Others . . .	3
N.Z. . .	5		—
Indian workers	5		76

SUDAN:

Khartoum . . .	A. Cuming
Atbara	
Port Sudan . . .	
Gebeit	

Digitized by Google



To face page 208]

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

APPENDIX VI

STATEMENT OF RECEIPTS AND PAYMENTS FOR THE PERIOD FROM JUNE 1, 1915, TO JUNE 30, 1918

The following is a complete statement of the accounts of the Y.M.C.A. during the period of the war:

RECEIPTS	£E.	£E.
Sales in Camps and Y.M.C.A. Centres		761,711.122
Cash Grants from Y.M.C.A., Australia	23,284.886	
,, ,, ,, London	17,710.820	
,, ,, ,, New Zealand	13,745.138	
,, ,, ,, New York	2,558.379	
,, ,, ,, Territorial %	833.660	
Countess of Chesterfield's M.E.F. Fund	2,917.500	
Australian Red Cross	1,355.879	
British Red Cross and Order of Jerusalem	492.375	
Australian Comforts Fund	625.000	
Subscriptions and Contribution Boxes	2,303.819	
Refunds	909.676	
Ladies' Soldiers' Café	200.000	
Bank Interest	72.283	
		67,009.415
		£E.828,720.537

Note.—The item "Cash Grants from London, £E.17,710.820," does not include supplies and equipment sent to Egypt by the English National Council free of charge, such as motor cars, marquees, furniture, libraries, stationery, gramophones, games, etc., etc.

PAYMENTS	£E.	£E
Goods purchased for Sales, including Transport, Salaries, Messing, and Travelling		706,364.548
Building, Furnishing, Equipment, Fuel, Water, Lighting, and Insurance		45,779.161
Stationery, etc., Free Gifts to Troops		9,846.368
Pianos, Entertainments, Sports		6,134.984
Rents		4,854.031
Free Gifts to Troops		6,947.769
Laundry		1,086.413
Hospital Expenses *re* Secretaries		414.495
Postages, Telegrams, and Newspapers		429.146
U.S. Welfare Fund		260.500
Cash stolen from Camps		717.564
Cheques returned unpaid		190.349
Loans to Camps		50.000
Anzac Hostel (original equipment purchase and anniversary expenses)		1,668.940
Cash Balances at Bank	23,206.653	
at Office	11,552.671	
at Camps	9,176.945	
Anzac Hostel	40.000	
		43,976.269
		£E.828,720.537

The Council passed a resolution to the effect that any profits made should be expended for the benefit of the soldiers during or after the war, and such surplus as may exist when peace is declared and demobilization is complete will be applied in some way to the army.

The Egyptian pound (£E.) is to the pound sterling as 100 : 97·5.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

INDEX

Abraham, Lieut.-Col., 135
American International Committee, 41
— Playground System, 5, 146 *et seq.*
— Y.M.C.A., 5
Anderson, Mr., 140
Anderson, Sir Robert, 65
Anzac Hostel, 65, 117
Arrival of troops in Egypt, 32–4
Assiout Mission, 114
Australian National Committee, 42
— Red Cross, 46, 56, 96, 188

Beard, Mrs., 65
Boardman, Chaplain, 140
British Red Cross, 47
Brown, Prof. P. M., 129, 142 *et seq.*
Bureau of Inquiry, 67

Central Club, Alexandria, 46, 47, 116
Chauvel, Col., 37
Claxton, A. E., 113
Colleges, Y.M.C.A., 11–15
— Springfield, 11–15
— — Curriculum in, 11–15
— — Dances in, 16, 17
— — Games in, 16, 17
Command Depot, 159
Committee, pre-War, 31
Conference, Cairo Y.M.C.A., 21 *et seq.*
Corner House, 66
Crouch, S., 123
Crouch, H., 123

Dale, Dr., 3
Dardanelles, Work at the, 68 *et seq.*
Davies, General, 78
Davies, Miss, 144
Deaver, Dr. G. G., 119, 159, 172
Decentralization, 7
Dixon, A. C., 112
Downes, R. D., 88
Drake, W. H., 41
Dunn, Mrs., 65

Elgood, Mrs., 38
Esbekieh, The, 38, 49 *et seq.*
— Swimming bath, 57
Esson, Lieut.-Col., 37
Exclusion of *Punch*, 4
Exeter Hall lectures, 2

Fayoum, Work in the, 110
Finance, 184
Flint, Theodore, 144
Foundation of Y.M.C.A., 1
Free gifts, 187
Funds in America, 8
Future of the Y.M.C.A., 193

Gaza, Battle of, 115
George, Mr., 94
Gillan, Rev. Mr., 95
Godley, Major-Gen. Sir Alex., 36, 70
Granville, Dr., 124
Greenhalgh, S., 112
Griffiths, A., 109, 135

Hamilton, Gen. Sir Ian, 73
Halliwell, Capt., 78
Hawker, Col., 69
Hay, J. L., 86
Hayden, Bert, 144
Heliopolis, First marquee at, 33
Howse, Col., 74
Hutchinson, W. A., 125

Indian work, 119, 127 *et seq.*
— National Council, 42
Inter-denominational work, 6
International Committee of New York, 144

Jaffa, work at, 145
Jerusalem, work at, 135

Digitized by Google

Jessop, Mr. W., 22, 29, 69, 71, 90, 102, 116, 189
Jessop, Mrs. W., 44
Johnson, Mr. W., 95, 185
Jones, Mr. T., 66, 139
Jordan Valley, Work in, 139

Kennedy, Dr., 38, 87
Keyte, J. C., 109
Kitchener, Lord, 39, 73

Legge, General, 53
Lena Ashwell Party, The, 144

MacDiarmid, Mr., 102
MacDonald, Sir M., 58
MacDonald, D., 74
MacMahon, Sir H., 39, 46, 49, 58, 81, 93
MacMahon, Lady, 44, 49
Magdaba, Battle of, 83
Maxwell, General Sir John, 43, 50–2
Maxwell, Lady, 50
Meeting at Residency, 38, 84
Money-making concern, A, 184 *et seq.*
Murray, General Sir A., 97 *et seq.*

Nasir, S. C. L., 126
New Zealand National Committee, 42

Oases, Baharia, 112
— Kharga, 106
— Siwa, 106
Outings Committee, 121
Owens, W., 71, 79, 95, 133

Paris Conference, The, 3
— Resolution, The, 4
Pay of workers, The, 186
Peacock, Mr., 92
Physical Education, 146 *et seq.*
Pienne, Miss Yvette, 144
Play and Playgrounds, 153
Policy, Y.M.C.A., 18, 184

Rafa, Battle of, 83
Relationship to Churches, 21 *et seq.*
Report, Y.M.C.A. Commission, 177
Rest Camp, Port Said, 125
Rex, Wilton, 75, 77
Romani, Battle of, 83
Ruffer, Sir Armand, 68

Samuel, Sister, 66
Senussi, The, 106
Shapley, G., 66, 82
Ship supply, A, 79
Short cuts, 189
Smith, Monteith-, R. E., 84, 192
Spens, General, 54
Springfield College, 7
Stack, H.E. Sir Lee, 105
Stewart, R. M. Grainger-, 192
Sudan, The Esbekieh, 105
— Work in the, 103 *et seq.*
Swimming bath, 57
Syllabus of physical training, 160 *et seq.*

Team work, 194
Thomson, J. K., 82
Trench, Archbishop, 3
Trumper, Lieut.-Commander, 90
Tullibardine, Lady, 44, 90

Union, Y.M.C.A. and Red Cross, 189

Virgo, Mr., 39

Watson, Lieut.-Col., 77
Watson, Major-General, 58
Western Desert, Work in, 106
What is the Y.M.C.A.? 1
Willcocks, Sir W., 30, 89
Willcocks ground, The, 30
Williams, Mr. Robert, 47, 48
Williams, Sir George, 1 *et seq.*
Williams, Surgeon-General Sir W., 46
White, Mr., 90
Whitelaw, Mr., 52
Wingate, High Commissioner Sir Reginald, 119, 122 *et seq.*
Work in 1916, 83 *et seq.*
— in 1917, 115 *et seq.*
— in 1918, 132 *et seq.*

Yapp, Sir Arthur, 41
Y.M.C.A. not a charity, 188

Zwemer, Dr., 84, 92

LONDON: H. K. LEWIS & CO. LTD., 136 GOWER STREET, W.C.1
Printed by Hazell, Watson & Viney, Ld., London and Aylesbury.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

89100091115

B89100091115A

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

89100091115
b89100091115a

Digitized by Google